

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

**For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>
And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>**

Married at 16 by Catharine Phiri

Chapter 1

Am in the classroom, it's just after break time and the history teacher is making everyone sleepy as usually. Out of the blue I feel the urge to pee, I just went to the bathroom 10 minutes ago♀. I shyly walked up to the teacher and asked for permission to go out, I went straight to the bathroom pulled my pants down and noticed some blood. Wait! Did I just get my first period? I wasn't that freaked out because the science teacher had already taught us about that. I've always asked my mum about and she said am just a late bloomer. I talked to one of the female teachers and she drove me home. I went into the house running with my jacket tied on my waist,

threw my bag on the couch. Just when I was about to run to my room my mother stopped me.....

"Come here!" She commanded and I slowly walked up to her. I avoided making eye contact standing in front of her with my legs crossed playing with my hands

"What did I say about running in the house" asked my mother

"Am sorry I just really need to get to my room" I answered on a low note

"And why are you home early?" "Well I..... I am" " I stammered

"I don't have all day young lady"

"I think I got my first period" I whispered "You know what that means right?" "What does it mean" I asked

"It means that you're ripe and ready" she smiled honestly I don't get it

"I don't understand!" I said

"Just go clean up and let me buy you a pack of pads" she smiled heading to the door. Why she is happy and what does she mean by ripe and ready? I went and took a bath afterwards mum came and talked to me you know the talk which is very awkward especially coming from my mother. She was telling me about womanhood which and random stuff that had nothing to do with my periods. Afterwards she

took me to bed. I didn't go to school the following 3 days because I was walking funny since am not used to it.

My name is Anele Tanaka Moyo am 15 years old well am turning 16 in a couple of days. I live with my mother, we live in a small town called Chitungwiza. Am the only child of Gerald and Ruvarashe Moyo, my parents separated when I was nine when my father made his secretary pregnant? Ever since life hasn't been great for my mother and I because she hardly manages the bills. My father sends us money every month but it's not enough to cover everything. I know y'all are wondering why I have a Shona and Ndebele name well my father is Shona and my mother is Ndebele. I go to a public school just near our house, I won't lie we are struggling.

So am coming from school with my friends Anita and Rutendo, we have been friends for a year now well they also know Ndebele, let me rephrase that. I taught them Ndebele.

"So what will you be doing during the weekend" asked Rutendo

"The usual, cleaning and doing laundry for people" I answered

"Why do you do that stuff anyway" asked Anita

"Because unlike you I wasn't born with a silver spoon in my mouth and my mother needs the money" I answered

"Are you and your mother throwing a party or what" asked Anita as we noticed cars parked outside my house. 'That's a lot of cars' I said to myself.

"Chommie you throwing a party and didn't even invite us" said Rutendo did I mention today is my 16th birthday, maybe my mother is throwing me a party but where did she get the money from?

"Trust me am as shocked as you are" I said

"Ok girl see you on Monday and if there's a party don't forget to call us" said Anita as they both hugged me goodbye. I got into the yard and saw the ladies from our neighbourhood cooking and everyone was all smiles.

"Maswera sei! (Good afternoon)" I greeted them then everyone started ululating♀. Okay!

"There you are" said my mother as she dragged me inside the house.

"Mama Silezivakatshi kanti? (We have visitors?)" I asked

"What took you so long? You usually come from school at 2" she said dragging me to my room and I noticed a lot of man sitting by the dinning, even my uncles and aunts were there. We got to my room and there was a neat African attire on the bed, my mum told me to put it on and it suits me perfectly revealing my figure. I also put on the doek. I look so great that left my mother in tears

"Umuhle mntanami (you're beautiful my baby)" she kissed me on the forehead then took my hand then we headed downstairs. They made me sit on the floor. Hello! It's my birthday and they making me sit on floor I kept looking down drawing the floor with my hands while they talked honestly I

wasn't even listening I was just thinking about how hungry I am at the moment and couldn't wait to taste all the food I saw outside.

"Anele!" my mother brought me back from my thoughts

"Yes ma!"

"This is your husband" she said pointing at some man I have never met

"Husband 😊" I gasped Maybe it's just a prank! Maybe she's just joking?

"Yes baby, he just paid lobola for you" my mother smiled

"What 😊 this is all for me?" I stood up

"Yes!"

"Am 15! I can't be somebody's wife. I haven't even written my O'level.

"Anele there are adults in the room" said one of my aunties

"I don't care! I can't get married" I said

"See how disrespectful she is" said one of the woman sitting with my aunties

"You people are sick" I said rushing to my room. This can't be! I looked at myself in the mirror and slapped myself. No! Am not dreaming, now am panicking! I can't be somebody's wife I am 16. Why would my mother agree to this? I get it we're in debt but to sell me like this.

"Start packing Anele you're leaving with your husband" said my mother as she stood behind me looking at the mirror.

"Do you hate me that much mum?"

"No! Anele this your ticket to the big life my child. You're getting married to a Prince and they will give you the life I can never give you. The house was going to be evicted and I couldn't afford to send you to school anymore but they can. Am not selling you my child, I just want the best for you" she said

"Marriage kodwa mama? I know nothing about marriage"

"It's not that hard just do everything your husband tells you and you'll be fine" she said

"Am scared mum" I said hugging her

"It's going to be fine my child" she replied. I know I should be mad at my mother for this but knowing her she has good intentions and I know it's my aunties and uncles are the ones who pressured her into agreeing with this madness. I packed my bags and headed downstairs and that man you know the so called Prince led me to the car and we drove off. The drive was so silent he didn't say anything to me how rude, he could at least introduce himself to me. I turned on the radio and he turned it off, why does he look so pissed anyway or he's just ugly♀ finally we got there and the place was amazing honestly when my mother said Prince I pictured pigs and chickens. We got out, he didn't even help me with my bags this idiot well I don't like him either. We got inside the house and my jaw almost dropped the place is just on point, the floors, the curtains, the couch, the stairs WOW 🔥 🔥 .

"Maria! Chido! Melissa!" He called out and three ladies came running and they bowed In front of him ok if I have to bow to him then we're going to have a serious problem.

"Manheru Baba! (Good evening)" they all said at the same time

"This is Anele the new wife" he rolled his eyes saying the wife part

"Hie!" Said one of them and the others just gave me the stinking eye.

"Anele these are your sisters my other wives" he said then walked away

What🙄🙄🙄am wife number 4

They all walked away and I was left with one of the wives, the one who greeted me. ♀What have I gotten myself into? Not to mention the 'Husband' did not even talk to me not to mention am starving and still wearing that African attire and it's hot.

"Hie am Chido" she smiles "Am Anele!

Nice to meet you"

"I can't even pronounce your name" she chuckled I guess she's hard core Shona

"Call me Tanaka then"

"Ok Tanaka let me show you to your room" she said lifting one of my bags and I followed her. The room is painted in peach and very huge it's my mother's bedroom and mine combined. There's a king size bed not to mention the dresser, the floor and the dresser.

"We've already had dinner but your food is in the warmer if you're hungry" said Chido

"Am actually starving" I said. "Follow me!"

"So you don't mind that am here I mean that am the fourth wife" I asked

"Well it's not our job to ask questions we just listen to our husband plus his father is the one who chooses a wife for him"

"No wonder he's so bitter" I said "That's our husband for you" "What's his name anyway"

I asked "I have no idea"

"You're married to someone you don't even know 🙄" I said as I shrug my shoulders.

Chido then lead me to the kitchen and dished up for me while she was telling me about how she became the third wife and how the other two are always ganging up on her. She's 20 years old I guess the Prince likes them young. After eating I washed my plates then headed to my room, Chido's

room is next to mine followed the sister wives' rooms then the almighty's room is on the third floor. I took a shower then changed into my P.J shorts and crop top. I still can't believe I have a husband now.

I was woken up by Chido shaking me♀ it's 1: 16am for crying out loud

"What" I said sitting up and rubbing my eyes "He's calling you" she whispered

"Ahh! Tell him am sleeping" I covered myself with the blanket

"It is by culture that you spend the night with him on your first day here" she said

"I don't care about culture I am sleeping go tell him that"

"You're going to get me in trouble" she cried♀♀♀. I stood up and locked the door.

"Will you calm down and sleep" I said "You're going to get us both in trouble♀" [21/01, 23:50]

Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 2

*** Kudakwashe ***

Wife number four♂Are my parents trying to kill me or what. I was doing great with my three wives, they have given me lovely children. Am only 31 and they making me marry a 16 year old, what I am going to do with her? My father is so bent on having a male grandchild that he'd go to an extent of

marrying a wife for me. Don't get me wrong I have nothing against Anele, yes she is pretty even prettier than all my wives but she's 16 for crying out loud. And from the looks of it this little girl is going to be a handful, I called her last night and she didn't even come. I didn't want to do anything I just wanted us to set some ground rules.

It's 10:30 am and no one has bothered to bring me breakfast. So much for having 4 wives and 2 cooks.

"Maria!" I called out, Maria is my first wife well she was also picked for me by my father. She's 23 she's actually the oldest of them all.

"Baba!" She said

"Where's my breakfast" I yelled

"The new wife is supposed to make you breakfast" she replied

"And where is she?"

"Akatorara zvake (she's still sleeping)" she answered.

"Call her now!"

After a few minutes Anele came down, she's half naked with her shorts and very tiny top. A Prince's wife isn't supposed to dress like this

"Morning!" She yawned sitting down and I just looked at her.

"What do you want" she asked

"First of all that's not how you greet me and second what are

you wearing?"

"Am wearing a crop top, do you have a problem with that"
she asked

"Yes! You're not supposed to be wearing it in the first place.
You're a married woman you're supposed to cover up"

"Is that why you called me" she folded her hands

"Make me breakfast"

"Are you asking me or commanding me" she said "Am
telling you to make me breakfast"

"When you're ready to ask me nicely you know where to find
me your highness" she said walking away

"Anele come back here" I yelled and she continued walking,
who does this kid thinks she is. I married her which means
she's mine now and she has to respect me. Where did my
parents find such a disrespectful girl? I followed her upstairs,
tried to enter her room but it was locked. Lucky her because
she was going to get a piece of me. I knocked but she's not
opening

"Is everything ok?" Asked Chido as she saw me knocking on
Anele's room.

"Shut up and go make me breakfast" I commanded

"Anele open this door" I kept banging the door. This girls has
only been here less than a day yet she's already a headache.

"Here's the spare key" said Melissa as she handed me the key

"And why are you still standing there" I asked

"Sorry!" She said going back downstairs, I opened the door and found Anele sitting on the bed with her earphones plugged in. I snatched the phone from her hands.

"Hey!" She said

"Listen little girl this is my house and you follow my rules do you hear me?" I said and she looked me directly in the eye, this girl has the nerve none of my wives are brave enough to even look at me.

"Oh so now you want to talk, you couldn't even introduce yourself to me what kind of a prince are you"

"Do not raise your voice at me" I yelled

"Yet you're raising yours" "Am your

husband" I said

"You're just someone who took advantage of a sixteen year old girl"

"Please! We both know you're lucky to be my wife many girls would kill to be in your position" I said

"Are you done talking and get out"

"Didn't your parents teach you any respect" I asked

"Respect in earned not demanded"

"Am going to leave before I murder you" I said heading out



"Can I have my phone back" she called out and I just threw it at her. I went downstairs and had breakfast with my three wives, the drama queen wasn't there. This kid is going to be the death of me.

"Mwana anodherera zvake uyo (that kid is so disrespectful)" said Maria, I knew she was going to start.

"Apa kuzofamba zvake akashama (worse she's walking around naked)" answered Melissa. These two and gossiping, Chido is the quiet one. She does what she's told, she's kind, and I actually like her even though my parents don't like her because she's barren.

"Should I call her to come for breakfast" asked Chido

"No! She's come when she's hungry" I answered and speak of the devil, she showed up still wearing her shorts♀.

"Morning everyone!" She said as she started eating.

"That's not how you greet your husband" said Maria

"Maria let her be" said Chido

"Oh look at that Chido can talk" said Melissa honestly I don't have the time for this, I went upstairs and changed then passed by the dining, they were still having breakfast, the drama queen is now quite well when it comes to talking Maria takes the cup.

"Anele come with me we're going out" I said and she just stood up and walked up to me, isn't she going to change.

"Where are we going" she asked "Will you

shut up and go to the car" "Geez loosen up"

she said

"Aren't you going to change?"

"No!" She answered "why is God punishing me like this, what kind of a wife is this. I then drove her to the mall, we need to get her some new clothes, proper clothes. We got to the mall and I took off my jacket and placed it on her shoulders. Anele is so tiny and short, my jacket is like a dress to her. I then started picking out clothes I think might suit her.

"Try this on" I said as I handed her the clothes

"Those are for me? There's no way am wearing that" she said
"Anele try these on and stop wasting my time I don't have all day"

"Why are you always so angry anyway" she snatched the clothes from my hand. She then tried the first one on.

"What do you think" she asked

"I don't care okay as long as it fits take it"

"Uyabheda yaz (you suck)" she mumbled "Excuse me!"

"Nothing" she fake smiled. "What is taking you so long?"

"What is your problem? You're the one who brought me here didn't you" she clucked, this girl is overdoing it. I followed her into the dressing room and pinned her against the wall with my hand choking her.

"Listen little girl am your husband and you will respect me. Got it" I said and she nodded then I let go.

"Last night I called you, why didn't you come? Why?"

"I was sleeping ok" she said holding her throat coughing
"And this morning I asked you to make breakfast for me"
"You have 4 wives couldn't you get one of them to cook for you" she said

"Again with the disrespecting me"

"Am sorry ok am 16 I know nothing about this, just yesterday I was coming from school when they told me am married"
she said

"Get your things and let's go" I said heading out I don't care about her sob story she needs to respect me

Am not about to be disrespected by a little girl who can be disciplined by a belt. We went back home, I think I scared her a bit well she needs to respect me.

*** Anele ***

When my mother said you marrying a Prince this is not what I expected, I didn't expect to be wife number 4 I didn't expect to be ordered around. I know I am rude and sometimes don't select words when am talking but am 16, what's his excuse. We got to the house of course he didn't help me with my bags, one of the guards ended up helping me. After a while he came to my room and literally ordered me to cook lunch thank God my mother taught me how to cook. I made lunch

for then then went to bed am not in the mood to play happy family after he almost choked the life out of me at the mall. The door opened and it was Maria do the people around here ever knock?

"Iwe Mundevele ukudedzwa (you're being called)" she said.
♀

"Am coming!"

"Izvezvi! (Now)" she said

"I said am coming what's your problem" I said getting out of bed and following her downstairs. I found them eating, I just stood there.

"Why aren't you having lunch" asked Mr Husband whose name I don't know.

"Am not hungry" I answered "Sit down and eat" he said "But am not hungry"

"Anele sit and eat. Why do I always have to repeat myself when talking to you and why haven't you changed those shorts" he yelled♀ this is torture. I sat down then started eating, after I was done I cleared the table then did the dishes since the helper was busy, when I was done I went back to room on my way there the almighty stopped me.

"Come here!" He ordered "What!"

"Don't what me, you have to refer to me as Baba" he said I couldn't help but laugh this guy must be out of his mind.

[23/01, 10:12] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 3

I repeat respect is earned not demanded, he can't just order me around like his worker. He might be my husband but he was no right to yell at me or force me to do what I don't want to do. I went to my room and took a nap until I was woken up by Melissa. Melissa is a nice person but when she's with Maria she turns into a different person. Maria is the devil himself, from what I've heard from Chido she's the first wife and she thinks she knows it all. Then there's Chido, she's just an angel in human form, she's sweet and kind.

"Wake up!" Said Melissa "What is it?"

"Dinner is about to be served" she said "It's dinner already?"

"Yes we eat dinner early" she answered "Am not hungry"

"He likes seeing all of us at the table

"Nhai iwe Melissa! Ukuzvinetsereii? Musiyе kana akaguta (why bother, leave her if she's not hungry)" said Maria pacing by.

"Am right behind you" I said to Melissa

"So is it true that you're Ndebele" she asked "Yes

why?"

"I've always wanted to learn Ndebele, can you teach me" she asked

"Sure why not!"

We then went downstairs and had dinner, no one was talking just folks, knives, chewing, swallowing and my phone which kept on buzzing, annoying the shit out of husband dearest.

"Will you turn that thing off" he yelled and I took it and put it on mute. But it kept flashing as the messages went in.

"You know what! Am not even hungry anymore" he said leaving the table.

"See what you've done" said Maria and I just ignored her well mostly because she's the oldest and am scared of her.

"She always manages to tick him off" said Melissa as she left the table followed by Maria

"Don't mind them" said Chido

"So what do you spend the day doing other than cooking and ironing" I asked

"Nothing! Our only job is to keep our husband happy and that's it, there are helpers who cook and clean the house then the clothes go for dry cleaning"

"That's boring" I said "Well it is what it is"

"What about going out and visiting friends" I asked

"You can do that with his permission of course" "This is torture" I said

"This is marriage. Well at least we get whatever we want, be it cloths or shoes" she chuckled then I looked at her, her clothes say otherwise. She has bad fashion taste just like her husband. After eating I cleared the table and did the dishes even though Chido told me not to, well am not used to sitting around and doing nothing. After doing the dishes I went to watch some TV mind me I still watch Disney channel, everyone is already in bed, and these people sleep at 8. While I was still watching TV Chido came and switched it off.

"Come with me" she said and I followed her to my room.

"What's going on" I asked as I saw things laid out on the bed.

"Go bath and wear this" she said handing me lingerie.

"Why?"

"Anele please just do as I told you. Please I don't wanna get in trouble trust me you don't wanna see him angry" she said and I did as instructed. Then came out with my gown on.

"What is this for" I asked.

"Follow me" she said as she took my hand and led me to the third floor.

"Don't be scared ok just do as he says" she said as she opened the door and pushed me inside then closed it. I think am going to be sick because my stomach feels like its inside out, am scared. Am still standing with my back against the

door. She said do whatever he tell you. Honestly I don't wanna do whatever he tells me especially if it means sleeping with that old man I try to open the door but it's locked from the outside. I know exactly what's going to happen next but am not ready for that, I don't even like the guy not to mention I don't even know his name. He then came out of the bathroom looked at me then went under the covers.

"Are you coming or what" he asked very calm "No

am good" I answered

"Come here Anele" he ordered and I shook my head no!

"Wanna play hard to get I see" he said as he harshly got out of the bag and can towards me but I ran into the bathroom and locked the door from inside.

"Anele open the door" he yelled "Am not ready"

"You're my wife God damn it" he banged the door

"I don't even know you yet you want me to sleep with you"

"I paid lobola for you. Now open the door" he yelled.

"I didn't ask you to pay lobola for me. I know nothing about you, you could have STD for all I know"

"Are you saying I have an STD" he asked

"Who knows? You have 3 wives don't you" I said and he hit the door hard, I could tell he was fuming

"You better not come out of there because they will moan you" he said, well I wasn't planning on coming out soon.

I think I might have dozed off because I was woken up by the coldness of the floor. I slightly opened the door to check if he was still there but he wasn't even in the room, I tip toed out and went downstairs to my room. To my surprise I found him sitting on my bed busy with his phone. What do I do? Do I run back out? I just stood by the door.

"Hie to you too wifey!" He said in the most polite way ever. I swallowed hard.

"What are you going here?"

"Ndikutamba fish fish! What do you think am doing here" he

asked in a firm commanding voice. God he's angry♀. I just kept quiet and continued drawing the tiles with my big toe with my back against the door.

"Sit!" He commanded and I went and sat on the far end of the bed away from him.

"You said I have an STD ayy 🙄" he laughed by himself, this is the first time am seeing him laugh.

"I didn't say you have one I said you might" I said in a low voice, don't get me wrong I don't wanna die young after all this man has 3 wives.

"What's the difference? And why did you run away" he asked

"Am not ready!"

"Then why are you here if you don't want to play wife" he asked

"You're the one who paid lobola for me didn't you!"

"How many times do I have tell you never to raise your voice at me" he yelled

"Sorry!"

"What have I gotten myself into" he sighed as he held his head

"Well that makes both of us" I mumbled. He got under the covers♀ why won't he go to his bedroom.

"Where am I going to sleep" I asked

"I don't care now stop annoying me" he said. Well am not going to sleep in the same bed with him so I went to his bedroom and slept there. 'Now this is a bed' I said to myself, I could get used to this. I woke up around 4 well am used to waking up early since I have to clean the house before I go to school, speaking of school what is going to happen now that am married? I fixed the bed then went to my room, the almighty was still sleeping and God does he snore. I then put on my black tights and grey hoodie, then went out for a jog well this figure doesn't just happen plus I need some fresh air. First I told Maria that I was going for a jog since I ran into her on my way out. She didn't say much her words were:

"Zvatichaona gore rino"

Well I don't care, am not here for here, I ignored her then went for my jog. I kind of got lost since it was a new area for me and the worst part is that I don't even know the house number of where I live nor have the phone numbers of the people I live with♀

*** Kudakwashe ***

Am not used to sleeping alone, I have three wives for a reason. I wake up and Mrs Drama queen isn't even in the

room. I go to my room and take a quick shower, put on my grey sweat pants and black T. Shirt well am not going to work today. I head downstairs and find my three wives preparing the table so we can have breakfast. They all greet me the. I sit and they join me, where's this kid?

"Where's Anele" I asked and they all look at each other

"Do I have to repeat myself" I asked

"We last saw her last night" answered Melissa "Did you ask the guards" I asked

"No one has seen her" answered Maria

"So you mean to tell me that she disappeared into thin air"

"Maybe she just went out" said Chido

"Mxm I just lost my appetite" I said heading to my room. Why does this kid have to be a headache? About 4 hours later Chido came to my room.

"Afternoon!" She said

"Hey Chido can I help you" I asked

"I think we should try looking for her, am starting to get worried maybe something happened to her" she said, I wish I could say no but I have a weak spot for Chido, she's just a saint

"Ok get my car keys" I said

"Ok and thank you" she said heading out then we went out to look for Anele, the funny thing is that she wasn't even that far, she was just 12 houses away. We found her by the side of the road with her head buried in her legs, her eyes are puffy I guess she's been crying well serves her right for leaving without telling anyone, I watched by the view mirror looking all sad in the back seat. Am trying so hard not too loud I mean who gets lost in this century, well I guess she ain't that tough after all. We got to the house and found Maria and Melissa watching TV.

"I want to know how Anele got out of the house without any of you noticing" I asked again they just looked at each other then I turned to Anele. Before I could talk she interrupted me

"Don't start with me, am tired and hungry trust me you do not want to mess with me right now" she said then she rushed upstairs. Maria and Melissa just looked at each other 🙄♂️🙄♂️ Jesus! I have never been this disrespected by a woman in my life. I followed her upstairs, she really needs to be put in her place. I harshly opened the door and to my surprise I found her in her lingerie with a towel hanged on her neck I guess she wants to go bath but she's busy with her phone. She looks great, her skin is just flawless with her natural hair. She caught me staring and screamed...

[23/01, 11:00] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 4

*** Kudakwashe ***

She caught me staring at her...

"What are you doing here" she yelled as she picked up the pillow and covered herself.

"I didn't know you were..." "Get out!"

She yelled "Stop acting like a kid"

"I am a kid now get out" she said as she wrapped the towel around her body, I just couldn't stop staring.

"Eventually am going to see all that"

"Get out!" She pushed me out of the room and locked the door.

I stood with my back against the door, I can't get the image out of my head. "Chill Kuda! She's just a kid" I said to myself. I took a deep breath then went to my room. I shouldn't be having these thoughts she's just a disrespectful, rude, under-aged spoilt brat with a killer body and a stinking attitude.

*** Anele ****

I think I should start keeping my door locked because the people around don't know the meaning of 'knock before you enter' or maybe put a huge sign on the door something like 'do not disturb'. Anyway I went and took a bath then went to find myself something to eat because am starving. I find them having lunch and what happened to 'he likes seeing all of us at the table' because no one told me lunch was ready. I went and joined them keeping a straight face.

"Ko mazorasika seii nhai Amainini (How did you get lost)" asked Maria they all burst into laughter I guess they were all holding it in.

"I went for a jog then I couldn't find my way back" I answered
"You know there's a gym there's a gym in the basement right" laughed Melissa

"Well now I know" I said then looked over at Mr Husband who was focused on his phone, I don't get how one can be so serious this man never smiles like ever.

"Am just glad you're ok" said Chido. Awwww isn't she a darling

"Thanks Chido" I smiled at her. Then my phone buzzed it was Rutendo my friend from back in Chitungwiza. I picked it up leaving the table and headed to my room...

Me: Hey baby!

Her: Ngikwatile vele (am mad at you)

Me: Sengenzeni girl (what have I done now) Her:

You got married and didn't even tell me

Me: Sorry girl it happened so fast, I didn't even know that I was getting married

Her: How are you copying kodwa?

Me: Kunzima Chommie (it's hard) you won't believe it, am wife number four

Her: Does it matter? Girl you married to a Prince

Me: Bona o sister wife ukuzifeeler ngathi bageza ngochago

Her: 😁😁so how's your husband

Me: He's rude and thinks he owns me well he's messing with the wrong girl

Her: Well he kind of owns you Me: Whose

side are you on? Her: Yours of course

look...

Before I could finish someone snatched the phone from my hands. I wanted to lash out but I turned to check who it was first and it was the almighty. He just snatched the phone from my hands and threw it on the floor. Oh he's about to get a piece of me.

"Who do you ?"

"She's sorry" said Chido as she interrupted me.

"Sorry for what? He just threw my phone on the floor" I said

"Listen to me little girl "he said and I interrupted him

"No you listen, you better get me a new phone before the end of the day or I swear there will be world war 3 in this house" I said

"Chido leave us" he said

"Please forgive her" she pleaded

"I said leave us" he yelled. He harshly closed the door the locked it from the inside.

"Repeat what you just said" he ordered "I just want my phone" I mumbled

"I can get you another phone Anele" he yelled

"I don't not want another phone I want that on. You can't just throw my phone because you can afford to buy a new one"

"Don't talk back at me" he yelled as he lifted his fist, I just closed my eyes waiting for the first to land in my face. He didn't hit me even though I pushed him to the limit⑧

"God you bring out the worst in me" he took the vase that was on the head board and threw it at the door.

"Am sorry" I whispered

"One thing that I want from you, one thing Anele. I need you to respect me. Are clear" he asked

"Yes!"

"We wouldn't wanna ruin that pretty face do we" he asked and I shook my head no.

"Now be a good wife and go get me some water" he said

"Ok" I said as I took a deep breath and headed downstairs, am literally shaking I can't even hold the glass.

"Let me get that" said Chido helping me as I silently sobbed.

"Are you ok? Please don't cry" she said hugging me

"I just wanna go home"

"Don't be silly" she chuckled well I ain't joking I really want to go home.

"How do you survive like this" I asked

"Like I said, keep Kuda happy then you'll be fine"

"Kuda" I asked

"Don't tell me you don't know his name? 😊 Well his name is Kudakwashe" she answered. Oh so that's his name

Chido then helped me get upstairs with the water. Well am not giving him the satisfaction of seeing me cry, I wiped my tears before entered the room. I gave him his water then started picking up the broken glass from the floor.

"Am sorry!" He said helping me pick up the glass "Ok"

I answered but this is not over.

"Who was calling you?" "Rutendo" I

answered "Oh!"

"Who did you think it was" I asked.

"Never mind! Here you go!" he said handing me a bank card

"What is this for" I asked

"Your bank card in case you need something"

"Oh! Thank you. I meant to ask, will I be continuing with school" I asked

"Give me a child first then you can have whatever you want"

"You're joking right?" I chuckled

"Do I look like am joking to you?" "But I have

to finish my O'level" I said

"Like I said give me a child first" he said. "I can't

have a kid am too young for that" "Well then why

are you here" he asked "You tell me"

"You're here to give me an heir" he answered "Over

my dead body" I whispered

"Oh we'll see about that" he said heading out. Am not having a child at this age, I can't be a mother. Am not even ready to lose my virginity.

(week later)

"He's going to kill me!" Cried Chido pacing up and down the room. She just burnt the almighty's t-shirt, I don't know why she was ironing it in the first place, and we have helpers for that.

"Calm down Chido am sure he won't mind after all it was an accident" I replied. Am not in the mood for drama today.

"This is his favourite shirt 😞 it's a designer" "Well

designer or not it's burnt isn't it?" I said "Am

finished 🙄 he's going to kill me today" "Just tell him

the truth" I said

"I am dead 🙄"

"You know what, give me the t-shirt I'll tell him it's me after all am the careless one" I said as I snatched it from her hands.

"No you can't do that" "Don't worry I'll be fine" I said well am used to getting yelled at so might as well help a sister out and take the fall for her. So I took the shirt and went to his room. Here goes nothing....

"Afternoon!" I said on a low note

"What do you want" he asked concentrated on his laptop.

"Am sorry I burnt your shirt" I said throwing it on the bed

"Why were you ironing it in the first place" he asked as he threw the laptop on the bed and walked upto me.

"I was bored so I thought..."

"You thought you could burn my shirt to keep you company" he said

"It was an accident"

"Do you need to be sent back to your parent's house so they can teach you how to iron" he asked. Well I tried to be nice but seems yelling is the best way to communicate between us.

"You know what I'd love it if you sent me back to my parent's house, at least I won't get to see your face every day" I said

"If you hate it here so much then why don't you leave?"

"You're the one who brought me here didn't you" I said

"Well am telling you to leave"

"Oh I am leaving" I said leaving the room

[23/01, 18:04] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 5

*** Kudakwashe ***

I thought scaring her might make her respect me but no this little girl bows down to no one, she talks back at me, she yells at me. I swear the only thing left is to hear that she slapped me, that's how much she disrespects. She wears her tiny clothes revealing her thighs and all that, where am I supposed to look. I have tried talking to her but she doesn't listen in fact she never listens. Because of her my other wives are starting to disrespect me. Maria and Melissa went to visit their parents which means it's just Chido, Anele and I.

A few minutes ago Anele walked out of me who does she thinks she is. I am the Prince for Christ's sake, she said she's leaving, if she leaves people will think am too weak to handle my wives. I followed her to her room and found her packing...

"What are you doing" I asked

"What does it look like am doing" she answered

"Anele!"

"Kudakwashe" she said continuing with what she was doing and did she just call me by my name.

"Never call me by my name, do you hear me?" "Well

it is your name isn't it" she said

"I said never call me by my name"

"Yooch nang' umuntu (abomination) ibizo ngelakho angithi (it is your name after all)" she mumbled

"And stop packing you're not going anywhere, you're going to stay here and you're going to be a good wife"

"You're lucky I don't know my way back home or I'd have left long ago" she answered

"And shouldn't you be preparing lunch?"

"I ordered pizza" she replied leaving the room and I followed her downstairs.

"Is pizza lunch?"

"Well its food isn't it" she asked

"If I wanted pizza I'd have gone to the pizza shop. I want a proper meal"

"Refusing food means you're not hungry Mr" she said

"I have two wives in the house and you expect me to eat pizza for lunch?"

"Do you know what else you have? Two legs to carry you to the kitchen and two hands to makes yourself something to eat" she said

"Are you listening to yourself? You want me to go make myself something to eat?"

"Exactly!" She said before turning the radio on full blast. The noise is just too much, I went to the kitchen where I found

Chido eating the pizza might as well join her. On the other hand Miss Anele is screaming on the top of her lungs in the dining. I guess this is what happens when you marry a 16 year old.

"Pizza!" Said Chido handing me a slice "What choice do I have" I sighed

"I see she's giving you a hard time" she laughed

"Can't you see am already losing weight?"

"I don't get why you two are always fighting. You just can't hold a proper conversation" she laughed

"Have you seen how she disrespects me?"

"Munozivana (I won't interfere)" she said

"So there's a business dinner today. I want you to come with me"

"What about Anele" she asked "What about her?"

"Why don't you take her with you? She really needs to get out of the house" she said

"And have her talk back at me in front of my colleagues"

"She won't!" she said

"Fine! Get her ready we leaving at 5 but I swear if she pulls on of her stunts we're going to have world war 3 like she said earlier"

♂♂♂Am already regretting this.

*** Anele ***

So am going out for a business dinner with husband dearest, which means I have to be at my best behaviour and try not to embarrass him In front of his friends well those were Chido's exact words. I took a bath then changed into a black, knee length off shoulder dress with black heels. I like my hair natural so I tied my hair to a bun and applied makeup even though I hate it but Chido said I have to look like the Prince's wife that I am. We then went downstairs and found Mr Man already waiting for me, he doesn't look bad for a 31 year old, and he's wearing a suit that matches with my dress.

"What took you so long" he asked looking at his wrist watch. he could at least tell me I look great so much for a husband

"Don't forget what I said" said Chido as she hugged me goodbye. I went to the car and Kuda opened the door for me, that's the first. We then drove this this so called business dinner:

"Try not to embarrass me" said Kuda as he helped me out of the car.

"I heard you ok. This is the fifth time you telling me that" I whispered, then he placed his hands on my waist leading me towards the door

"I'd appreciate it if you don't talk at all we both know nothing good comes out of that mouth" he said

"Yes your highness" I rolled my eyes.

The place itself left me speechless, not to mention the people there. Everyone was on point then looked great, they were great, and they even smelt great. It's like everybody in the room knew him, it's like he's the boss. After he had greeted literally everyone we went and sat at the table, seems like everybody brought their wives too. Everyone seemed to be having fun mingling expect me because I know no one and I know nothing, not to mention am not allowed to speak. I am so bored that the only thing left is for me to take out my phone and start texting my girls or even play candy crush

"Your wife seems bored" said one lady and I fake smiled.

"And she's so quiet, is she like that even at home" said the other, only if they knew how much this little girl talks😊.

"What's her name again" asked some Mr whom I don't remember his name. I wanted to stay quiet by Kuda

squeezed my hand under the table I guess that was the talk signal.

"Well you're pretty Anele" he said and his wife playfully hit him.

"You looks so tiny and innocent. How old are you?"

"Old enough" I smiled

After dinner people started talking and talking and talking. I am tired of all that standing and smiling, I just want to go home and sleep. I then excused myself and went to the bathroom, not to mention my feet are killing me. When I got out Kuda was waiting for me outside the bathroom...

"Did you die in there" he asked

"I can't go to the bathroom in peace now"

"Come with me, there's someone I'd like you to meet" he said

"Am I allowed to talk this time?"

"Don't start Anele" he said as he placed his hand on my waist leading me to where we headed

"Isn't there anywhere else you can place your hand?"

"You just don't shut up do you" he said

"Well the mouth is for talking"

"Behave!" He squeezed my waist a little causing me to flinch in pain.

"Do that one more time and I will cause a scene" I whispered

"Is this her" asked a lady who looked like she's in her sixties, she was with a man whom am guessing is her husband.

"This is her" sighed Kuda scratching his head.

"She's pretty! She's going to give us beautiful grandchildren" said the man as he hugged me. And I gave Kuda what's going on look and he ignored me so I had to kick him first, without anyone noticing of course

"Anele!" He said trying to keep it cool "Yes

darling!" I smiled

"Mom and dad this is Anele my new wife" he said as he twisted my arm a little.

"I love her" said the mum as she squeezed my cheeks honestly I don't know whether to bow or what.

"Nice to meet you" I shook their hands well that's all I could do♀Mind you I don't even know their surname m He then introduced me to some of his colleagues. The woman around here call him by his name yet am not allowed to call him by his name. I just can't wait to get home and remove these heals. Kuda then disappeared on me, I was all alone sitting by the table busy playing candy crush on my phone.

"Evening ma'am"

"Hie!" I said focused on my phone

"What is a pretty lady like you doing sitting alone" he asked

"Who said I was alone?"

"Well you are sitting alone aren't you" he said

"Look Mr..." I said as I placed my phone on the table and actually looked at him. Now this is a man, don't get me wrong Kuda isn't bad but this one is a 10.

"Am Jerald" he said "Anele!"

"Nice name! What does it mean" he asked "It means leave me alone am married 😊" "Wow!

How old are you" he asked

"Do you know that it's rude to ask a lady her age?"

"Am sorry it's just that you're so tiny and cute if I could bottle you I could drink you everyday" he said

"Well unfortunately I can't be bottled Jerald" "You remember my name" he said

"Don't flatter yourself" "Feisty I see" he smiled

"Look there's my husband and he does not look happy" I said as I saw Kuda coming towards us

"You're Kuda's wife" he asked

"What part of 'my husband' did you not understand?"

"Well you don't look like the kind to become the 4th wife" he said

"Sorry to bust your bubble but I am"

"Hey man!" Said Kuda as he shook hands with Jerald

"You have one lovely wife" said Jerald as he left us

"What part of do not talk to anyone did you not understand"
asked Kuda

"So you wanted me to ignore him?" "Yes!" He
answered

"Sorry your highness I didn't know"

"Get your things and let's go" he said 🙌🙌🙌. We then drove
back home and he was speeding like nobody's business.

"Stop the car" I said "Why" he asked

"Stop the car right now" I yelled and he hit the brakes
causing me to hit hard on the dashboard.

"What is it?"

"Are you trying to kill us" I asked

"Is this why you stopped me?"

"What is your problem, why the sudden mood change" I asked

"It's you! You never listen to anything I tell you"

"What did I do" I asked

"I told you not to talk to anyone"

"You need serious help Kudakwashe" I said fastening my seat belt

"What did I say about calling me by my name?"

"Whatever just drive. Kudakwashe!" I clucked. This man knows how to ruin somebody's day♀

.

[24/01, 13:28] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 6

We drove home in silence, I don't understand why he's angry I didn't even do anything. We got home and he didn't even wait for me he just got into the house slamming the door in my face. I found Chido and the other two (I guess they are back) watching TV.

"What did you do this time" asked Maria

"I didn't do anything" I answered taking off the heels

"What happened at the business dinner" asked Chido

"Nothing! I did as instructed, I didn't talk to anyone" I said

"Did anyone talk to you" asked Maria

"Yeah some guy named Jerald"

"Kudakwashe doesn't like it when other man talk to us especially when they making you smile and all that" said Melissa

"Well he seemed fine when they greeted each other" I said

"Well Jerald also tried his luck with Melissa so Kuda doesn't trust him" said Chido

"Did you really have to mention that" said Melissa "Yes she need to know" asked Chido

"You should go apologize" said Maria "Apologize for what, I didn't do anything" I said

"Anele just apologize before you get us all in trouble" said Chido. One disadvantage of being in polygamy is that your decisions affect every body, I guess I have to swallow my pride and go apologize. I went to my room and changed into something comfortable then headed to the almighty's room. I took a deep breath before knocking, he then told me to come in....

"What do you want Anele" he asked as he says up and looked

at me.

"I wanted to say sorry" "Sorry for what"

he asked

"If I did anything to tick you off am really sorry" "You always do something to tick me off" he said "Like am saying am sorry ok!"

"Even apologizing is hard for you" he said "Well

you don't make it easy for me" "You're a

headache Anele" he said

"Am sorry!"

"Just go" he said. Well I tried♀. Honestly I don't have the time to beg him after all I didn't do anything so whatever he can take his anger and shove it where the sun doesn't shine. I went back to my room and started texting with my friends, they were telling about school and it got me thinking I really

need to finish my O'level it's not yet late I can still do it. But I'll have to convince Mr Husband of course.

The following morning I was woke up around 5, went to the gym downstairs. I really need to find a way to convince Kuda to let me go back to school. I really need to finish my O'level, am not asking for money because my registration fee has already been paid u just need his permission to go. After workout I went and took a shower then headed downstairs to prepared breakfast for 'the almighty'

"Kwakanaka here Amainini (is everything ok)" asked Maria

"Morning to you too" I said

"Since when do you cook breakfast this early?" "It's

for your husband" I answered

"Well he's also your husband"

"How can I forget that with him reminding me every 2 minutes" I rolled my eyes

"Unodherera zvako mwana iwe (you're so disrespectful)"

"And then! What did I do now" I asked

"Ever since you came into this house our Husband doesn't have time for us because he's always angry at you"

"What does that have to do with me" I asked

"You're the one who makes him angry, I don't know how you always manage to tick him off, and I just wish you never came here"

"Well that makes the two of us" I said getting the tray and heading to the third floor. Maria's words don't even shake me. Plus my mind is on convincing Kuda to let me go back to school. I went to his room, he was in the shower so I waited for him. I was standing with my back against the door thinking of a way to tell him....

"Good morning" I said as he came out of the bathroom

"What do you want?" He asked

"I made you breakfast" I said as I turned and faced the door, am not about to watch him get dressed.

"Are you trying to poison me or something" he asked. How I wish, but today I don't want to fight with him so am going to let this one go.

"I just wanted to say sorry for last night" "Is that all?" He asked

"There's something I'd like to ask"

"Of course there's something. You'd never cook for me voluntarily" he said, mind you am still facing the door.

"Please! I wouldn't be asking if it wasn't important"

"So you're not going to even look at me when " he asked

"Depends! Are you dressed?"

"Yes!" He chuckled, then I turned and faced him

"So here's the thing, I really need to go back to school and finish my O'level and I was. "

"No!" He said "Why?"

"Because I said so" he answered

"It's not like am asking you for money am just asking for permission"

"And am saying no! I told you to give me a child first" He said as he walked to me

"But am writing in a few months?"

"You'll write your exams with junior in there" he said poking

me in the stomach with his finger.

"But am my ready to be a mother" "Then kiss

school goodbye" he said

"Look here Mr, it is my right to go to school ok it's not like you'll be doing me a favour" I said getting on my toes so I can look at him directly in the eyes because he's about to get it.

"And as your husband am telling you that you're not going to school"

"As your wife am telling you that am going with or without your permission. Kudakwashe!" I said

"Don't call me by my name!"

"Or what" I asked, then he pushed me again door pinning my hand over my head.

"Don't push me Anele" he said sort of like sniffing my neck which is disgusting because this man is old enough to be my father.

"Let go of me!"

"You know I always ask myself, how are you so rude" he asked

"And I always ask myself why you never at work?"

"I warned you" he said as he undid my gown with one hand pinning me to the wall and the other undoing my gown.

"Am sorry! Am sorry!" I said with my eyes closed and he let go.

"Not so confident are we" he said

"Am sorry! I'll never call you by your name"

"You can go" he said as he kissed me on the forehead. I rushed out and went to my room.

"Hey!"

"Chido!" I screamed

"Relax it's just me. Is everything ok?"

"Yeah am fine" I answered "You're shaking!"

"Am fine!" I said "Did he hurt you?"

"No!" I answered "Are you sure?"

"Yeah he didn't do anything" I answered "Okay I'll be in the kitchen if you need me" "Ok!"

I looked at myself in the mirror, just three weeks ago I was a girl who just got her first period and now am married. This is not how I pictured my marriage to be like, I never saw myself as the fourth wife. Now I have to be a mother at 16 ♀. Why does life have to be like this? While I was still lost in my thoughts I text came through phone and its Rutendo and Anita saying they are downstairs♀why are they here. Its 9'39am, I rushed downstairs and I found them sitting on the couch with Maria.

"Hey guys!" I fake smiled, these two are going to get me in trouble

"Hey girl" they screamed as they hugged.

"Zvakaoma shuwa" said Maria as she left the room.

"Yini ngaye lo (What's her problem)" asked Anita

"Don't mind her she's just bitter" I answered

"Is this what you have to deal with every day" asked Rutendo

"Imagine!"

"And may I say the house is amazing" said Anita

"Wait till you see the bedrooms" I replied

"So how's it like being the Prince's wife" asked Rutendo

"It sucks, I can't even go to the bathroom in peace" 😊 is

it that bad" asked Anita

"Yes! And I hate it here"

"So have you done it" asked Rutendo and I gave her the I don't know what you talking about look.

"You know the deed" giggled Anita

"Ewww no! The man is old enough to be my father"

"But he's your husband" said Rutendo

"And he's the Prince" said Anita "And I

don't care" I answered

"I don't understand why you hate him so much" said Rutendo

"For starters he's old"

"And handsome and a prince" said Anita "You don't even know him" I said

"Yeah but he's coming towards us right now and I know that's definitely him" she whispered

"Oh boy!" I sighed we all know he's about to start shouting

"Anele can I talk to you in the kitchen" asked Kuda as Anita and Rutendo greeted him.

"Right behind you" I answered. "Now Anele!"

"Yoooh girl you should go" whispered Anita as I followed Kuda to the kitchen.

"Who are they" asked Kuda "My friends!"

"Did you tell me they were coming" he asked "Well I didn't know they were coming either" "I want them out" he said

"Let me get this straight, are you saying I should kick my friends out"

"Am saying you can't invite people without my permission" he said

"I don't have time for this" I said trying to walk away but he pulled me back

"Don't walk away from me"

"Let go of my arm or I will fight you in this kitchen" I said

Then somebody cleared their throat, it was his mother♀.

[25/01, 23:57] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 7

So mother in law is here, why is she here? Worse she found me threatening to fight her son♀. Am just applying to be sent back to my mother's we all know how strict the in-laws can be especially royalty when it comes to their children, well on the other hand she'll be doing me a huge favour because I hate it here. Kuda went upto his mother and greeted her, well I haven't moved because I don't know whether to shake her hand, hug her or even bow down.

"What are you standing there for" she asked, my heart is racing. Am bombarding myself with questions, is she going to start shouting like her son.

"Excuse me!" I swallowed hard

"Don't just stand there, come give me a hug" she smiled. And I walked upto her and hugged her.

"Hie ma!" I said well I don't know if I should be saying 'hie' in the first place but what the hell

"How's my favourite daughter in-law" she asked. Since when am I her favourite, she just met me last night for crying out loud.

"Am fine thank you! How are you" I said and Kuda kicked

me♀what was that for. I swear a part of me wanted to kick him back, then it ticked Rutendo and Anita are in the dinning well how could I forget with them laughing so hard, I bet the whole house could hear them. I excused myself and headed to the dining....

"Guys keep it down" I whispered

"And then? What took you so long" asked Rutendo

"And why are you shushing us" asked Anita

"Long story short mother in-law is here and am afraid you guys have to leave😞" I said.

"That was her" laughed Anita

"Not cool guys she's old enough to be our grandmother" I said

"The fact that you said grandmother itself is insulting judging by what she was wearing" laughed Anita

"Guys not cool!"

"We all know you want to laugh you just holding it in because she's your mother in-law" said Rutendo. In my defence I see nothing wrong with her except her bad fashion taste well like mother like son🙈

"Stop it you two. Let me walk you out" I said

"Vele sus'cotsha (you're kicking us out)" asked Anita

"Come on girl you know it's not like that"

"We get it you're married now" said Rutendo as a car hooted, I called a cab for them.

"Yeah! Let me walk you guys out"

"So when are you going to visit us" asked Anita "I

don't know" I sighed

"And school?" Said Rutendo and I just sighed how I tell my friends that am not even allowed to go back to school.

"Let me guess you don't know" said Rita "It's

complicated" I said

"Ok then take care of yourself and don't get pregnant" said Anita as she closed the car door

"Miss you already" I said waving at them.

Seeing my friends like this reminds me of home, I miss my mother, I miss our small house. Even if he had nothing at least we were happy with the little we had. This is the first time smiling in three weeks. The only one thing people in this house know best is how to shout and fight. I waved at them with tears threatening to come out, who I am kidding thinking about school and hanging out with my friends, am married I may never see my friends nor school ever. I wiped the tears off my cheeks and went inside the house and found mother in law with her daughters, they seemed to having fun. Well am not yet that close to them so I wouldn't know what to talk about so I decided to excuse myself. Kuda was just sitting with them but concentrated on his phone, I don't understand how he's always on his phone. I was about to go up the stairs when Kuda stopped me...

"Anele!" He said very calm, he better not start with me.

"Yes!" I fake smiled

"Can you make something for my mother" he asked and why isn't he asking one of his wives, they are sitting next to him for Christ's sake but hey he just had to call Anele. I went to the kitchen and prepared some tea, I had to prepare tea for everyone of course. I served them with cookies. Right as I was about to go upstairs again he stopped me ♀ again.

"Anele!"

"Yes darling" I fake smiled causing Chido to chuckle.

"I only drink coffee" said Kuda ♀ why did he tell me when I poured the tea? I took a deep breath then walked up to him and took the cup, when to the kitchen and prepared the coffee he wants then gave him his coffee.

"Anele!" He said "Mmmm"

"I don't drink sugar nana" he said. And the way he said 'nana'. This man is tempting me, I don't even put any sugar because I know he drinks his coffee without sugar, it's like he wants me to lash out In front of his mother. I kept my cool took the cup from his hands went to the kitchen and came back with the same cup and gave it to him.

"Anele!" He said and I noticed the others were in stitches it's like they enjoying all this. I feel like strangling him right now.

"Yes!" I said

"Thanks for the coffee" said Kuda "Ok!" I

said walking away "Anele!"

"What!" I yelled then held my mouth. Did I just yell at him in front of his mother?

*** Kudakwashe ***

Exactly what I wanted, I wanted my mother to see the kind of wife she and dad chose for me. She just stood there with her hand in her mouth then I looked over at mum who didn't even seem to care what was going on. She was busy with her tea

"I am so sorry" said Anele before she rushed upstairs.

"Leave us" said my mother referring to Chido, Melissa and Maria. They did as instructed...

"Do you have anything you'd like to talk me" asked mum

"No why?"

"So you have nothing to tell me" she said sipping on her tea

"Nope" I shook my head

"Then why are you ordering your wife around like some slave? What are you trying to prove?"

"You mean the same wife you and dad chose for me. Mum she's 16 years old♂Are you trying to get me arrested" I asked

"Kuda you always marry them young, how's Anele any

different from your other wives?"

"She's just too much mum, she never listens to me, she wears her tiny clothes, she talks back at me, he's just disrespectful not to mention she's underage at least my other wives were 18 or older" I sighed

"Are you done?"

"Mum this is serious ok, the kid doesn't even want to be here" I said

"Then send her back home"

"Excuse me!" I said, I didn't expect her to say that, I expected her to say something like she's going to be taught respect by her aunties then she'll come back when she's legal or something.

"If you hate her so much then send her back to her parents, we both know you don't care about the money so why keep her here"

"What will people say" I asked

"People always talk Kuda" she said and I paused processing what she just said. Now that I have the power to release Anele I don't even want to? I just sighed.

"Well do you want her to go? I can call her right now" said mum

"Well..... I. I don't want her to go" I sighed

"You like her don't you" she chuckled "It's either that or am losing my mind"

"Why wouldn't you I mean she's gorgeous" she said

"But she's 16 mum, she's old enough to be my daughter"

"Well she is your wife after all and I want a grandchild soon, am not getting any younger" she said

"Good luck with that" I laughed, Miss Anele will never agree to that. While we were still talking the door opened and it was my cousin Jerald who has a habit of hitting on literally every woman I get with.

"Beautiful people" he said as he sat on the couch. "Hie

Jerald" I said in a low note

"You could at least pretend you're happy to see me" he said

"I am happy, am just surprised to see you here" I said because I haven't seen him since the Melissa incident.

"Your highness" said Jerald as he hugged mum ignoring my question.

"My favourite person" smiled mum 😊 I thought I was her favourite person.

"Kuda call all one of your wives to make me something to eat, am starving" he said

"We have helpers for that you know" I said "Then tell them to get on with it"

*** Anele ***

After yelling at Kuda I rushed to my room and locked myself there. I was hungry so I decided to go find something to eat. These people must be of the devil 😏 no one even bothered to call me for lunch, at least I found them still dishing I then joined them. I didn't know Jerald was family ♀ so if he's family then why would he hit on Melissa? Everyone is having a great time talking about how great last Thanksgiving was, again am left out well where I come from we don't even celebrate that, to us it's just a normal day. So am sitting between Jerald and Kuda ♀ Kuda acts like I disgust him well I feel the same way about him then Jerald won't stop winking at me just looking at them makes me want to hurl. So we busy eating and I feel Jerald's hand on my thigh, what is his problem? I keep my cool, don't wanna cause a scene because everyone expects that from me. So I quietly remove his hand but he keeps doing it. I kick his leg then the table shakes, I pretend I didn't hear anything.

"You're quite Anele, is everything ok" asked Jerald with a smile on his face ♀ the nerve!

"Nothing!" I said clenching my jaw and I harshly removed his hand from my leg. Why am I being tested like this ♀?

[26/01, 23:26] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 8

Why is Jerald doing this? Especially in front of everyone well not literally but he shouldn't be touching me, am married to his cousin for Christ's sake whom I don't like of course but still he has to respect that. If there's one thing I hate most in the whole wide world it's being touched, am trying to keep his hands off me without anyone noticing but it's like he's doing it on purpose. Am trying so hard to keep my cool but Jerald won't get his hand off me. I don't know what Jerald's trying to prove but I swear he's about to get punched by me.

"Is everything ok makoti" asked mother in law, it's like she saw what's good on.

"Yeah am fine" I fake smiled.

"Your wife is very shy Kuda" said Jerald as he squeezed my thigh. What is wrong with him?

"Yeah right" Kuda whispered

"She really looks quite to me" said Jerald and I kicked him a little since he won't get his hands off me.

I excused myself from the table then went to the kitchen. But Jerald just had to follow me♀what does he want from me.

"Hey Princess" he smiled

"What do you want from me" I asked "I want you!"

"Are you even listening to yourself" I asked "Come on Anele you know what I mean"

"Whatever! Why did you follow me here" I whispered
"I haven't formally introduced myself am Jerald Diale" he smiled

"And I don't care I just want to know why you're touching me" I asked

"Come on girl we both know you want all this" he said and I looked at him for a moment. Who does he think he is? I don't want him, yes he might be good looking but he's old just like Kuda.

"Am warning you Jerald touch me one more time and "

"What are you going to do? I'd like to see you angry" He laughed

"Touch me and you're going to find out"

"I like how feisty you are 😊 it kind of turns me" he smiled.

"You're sick" I said trying to walk away and he pulled me to his arms and hugged me.

"Let go of me" I yelled trying to break loose but he tightened his grip

"Don't fight it princess we both know you want it as much as

I do"

"Let go Jerald. I don't want you" I said trying to push him off but his muscular arms are just too strong for me. I don't know whether to call for help or handle this myself because I will. But on the other hand I don't want to cause trouble for anyone, I don't want Kuda and Jerald to have bad blood because of me.

"Jerald let go of her" said Kuda who was standing by the kitchen door with his hands in his pocket and his back against the fridge, how long has he been standing there. And Jerald let go, he's not even shaken by Kuda♀. I stood there waiting for Kuda's response

"Really man! First it was Melissa now Anele. What is it with you and hitting on my woman" said Kuda in the most polite way ever.

"Drop the act Kuda we both know you don't even like her so stop acting like you care, we both know I will be doing you are huge favour" said Jerald. If Kudakwashe doesn't even like me then why did he marry me?

"Jerald not now" said Kuda

"She needs to know the truth ok. Look at her she deserves better" replied Jerald

"And let me guess you're what's better" said Kuda getting angry

"Well at least I won't pretend to like her when I don't" replied Jerald.

"Shut up Jerald" Kuda yelled "Is that true" I asked

"Anele leave us" commanded Kuda

"Am not going anywhere until you tell me the truth and I want to why you married me if you hate me so much" I said

"Anele I said leave us" yelled Kuda

"You know what I'll just tell her! (Then he turned to me) Your husband here married you because his parents made him, he doesn't even want you. To him you're just somebody who's going to carry his child since his last wife is barren" said Jerald

"Is that true" I asked in a breaking voice with tears threatening to come out. I know I don't like Kuda but for some reason what Jerald said broke my heart. If am nothing to him then why bother bringing me here, did he feel sorry for me? He figured since I was chosen by his parents he might as well keep me. He felt sorry for poor Anele and thought he'll be doing me a huge favour by bringing me here.

"Anele let me explain" said Kuda

"So it's true! Did you feel sorry for me? Is it why you're always yelling at me because you don't want me here" I asked

"That's not true" he said

"Well I'll make things easy for you Kuda I'll leave, I'll leave you with your 3 wives and like Maria said things were fine until I came along so I think it's best if I leave" I said rushing to my room, I locked the door then took out my suitcases and started packing, am leaving....

"Anele open the door!" Said Kuda knocking "Go away! I don't want to talk to you!" "Anele I mean it open up" he said

"Just leave me alone!"

"Please at least let me explain" he said "I have heard all I need to know"

"That wasn't true Anele well most of it wasn't. Just open the door and I'll explain everything" he said

"No need to feel sorry for me okay?"

"Anele I don't feel sorry for you" he said knocking "Go away Kuda!"

"If you don't open this door I swear to God Anele am breaking it down" he said

"I don't care! Break it down if you want"

"I swear if you don't open on the count of three am breaking the door down"

"And am shaking in my boots" I said mocking him

"One!" He said, I guess us doing the count down.

"Two!" I said

"Am not joking. Two! "He chuckled at how am daring him.

"Three!" I called out

"Am not joking Anele open the door" he hit the door

"Three already!" I said continuing packing, then there was a loud bang on the door like something was thrown at the door.

"God Anele stop being childish and open up" he yelled, there's no way he can break down the door these doors are timber. I continued packing well I don't care if he breaks the door or not. I took my phone called a cab then put on my headphones while packing. Its funny how the songs we listen to always make us cry more. I finished packing my bags then headed out, I found him sitting by outside the door with his hand on his head. I just wheeled my bags out leaving him calling my name. Everyone was so shocked when they saw me with my bags well I don't care am leaving.

"Is everything ok? What's with the bags" asked Chido who was in tears, she's such a cry baby.

"Am leaving" I answered

"Why? What happened" asked Maria, as if she's not happy that am leaving.

"Ask your husband" I said wheeling my bags to the door.

"Anele come back here" called out mother in law

"Am sorry ma! But I can't do that" I answered "I said

come here" she ordered

"With all due respect ma! I have already made up my mind after all your son doesn't want me here so I might as well leave" I said

"Anele don't go, please whatever it is let's sit and talk about it" said Chido.

"Am sorry but am leaving" I said walking up to her and hugging her. I am so going to miss her, i then I headed out, the taxi was already waiting for me. Chitungwiza here I come. Am going back to our small house where it's going to be just me and my mother. A house without the ten commandments a place where I get to be myself, where I get to wear what I want, whenever I want. I can't wait to see my mother or go back to school. Tears are screaming off my eyes, Chido really broke my heart. It pained to have to leave her but I can't be where am not wanted. And Kuda! I hate him even more...

[27/01, 23:04] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Now I finally understand the term 'Home is the best', I can actually feel that am back home. I got inside the yard and the door is locked which means my mother isn't home but I know where she keeps the keys when she's leaves the house, she hates carrying them because she's scared she might lose them. The neighbours where looking at me guess they didn't expect to see me back home. I got inside the house and it hasn't changed at all, it's the same way I left it three weeks ago. I went to my room, how I missed my room. It's not big but I love it, there's a single bed, small wardrobe and a table that I use when studying. My uniform was still on the bed where I left it and there are posters on the wall, posters of my favourite celebrities. I put my bags by the corner, will unpack tomorrow. I tried calling my mother but her phone is not reachable♀ I went to the kitchen, prepared myself something to eat. After eating I did the dishes then went to bed, my mother isn't yet back.

The following day I woke up around 5, went and checked my mother's bedroom but she isn't there I guess she didn't come back last night, I put on my gym clothes that's when I remembered am back in Chitungwiza where we don't have a gym so I guess am running today.

My phone buzzed, it was an incoming call from Kuda well I don't want to talk to him. After an hour I came back and took a shower put on my black jeans and white t shirt then

headed to school I really need to explain to them why I haven't been coming to school and see if they can take me back.

"Tell me am seeing things" said Rutendo as walked upto me, I was sitting outside the principal's office.

"Hey girl" I stood up and hugged her "Why didn't you tell me you're back?"

"In my defence I was going to call you" I said "So he finally allowed you to come to school?" "Something like that" I answered

"Well am glad you're back" she hugged me before rushing to class. Finally I got into the principal's office and he recognised me the moment I entered mostly because am one of the A students in the school.

"Anele! How are you?" He said

"Am very fine sir, how are you" I answered as we shook hands.

"Am fine! I haven't seen you in a while. I heard you got married"

"Well it's complicated but am not here to talk about my marriage" I said

"How may I help you then?"

"I wanted to ask if it's possible for me to come back to

school, I know I just left but I didn't have a choice" I said

"Am afraid you can't come back, our maximum is 3 weeks and after that we remove from the school register"

"But it's not yet 3 weeks, I still have 2 days left, that counts right" I asked

"Am sorry Anele but we can't accept you" "Why!"

I asked

"You're married and that won't be a good idea mixing you with other students"

"I know but nothing changed am back at home and no longer married. Please sir am begging you" I pleaded

"Am sorry but we can only let you write your final year but we can't let you be a student here"

"Sir please if I don't come to school then how am I going to prepare for my final exam" I asked

"Try Extra lessons"

"I can't afford that" I cried

"Am sorry Anele but there's nothing I can do about it plus your family don't want you back at school"

"What do you mean" I asked

"I know I shouldn't be telling you this but your mother and your husband were here just hours ago and they said they'll sue the school if we let a married woman learn with kids. What example will we be setting?"

"But I didn't have a choice, I was forced I didn't even want to get married" I cried

"Am sorry you had to go through that but it's against my power"

"Sir this is me, am still the same Anele I was three weeks ago nothing changed and why would my mother support something like this" I said

"Am sorry Anele but I have to get going, we have a staff meeting" he said leaving the room, so my mother is involved in all this. Why would she do something like this? I got out of the principal's office, sat by the door and cried my heart out, what did I do to deserve all this. I walked home with everyone on the way was looking at me well I don't care, school was the only thing that kept me from going insane and now it has been taken away from me. I got home and the door was open I guess my mother is back from God knows where, I got into the house and I found my bags by the door....

*** Kudakwashe ***

(The previous day)

I watched her walk away from me, I could see the hurt in her eyes. I didn't not marry her because I felt sorry for her, I married her because my parents always chose the wives I marry and I never marry for love, their only job is to give me kids and keep me satisfied but with Anele it's different. She stands her ground, she knows what she wants and she's speaks her mind, I know I hated her the first days but I fell in love with her rudeness, her being feisty and her talking back at me. I admit everything that Jerald said was true except the part where I feel sorry for her. I didn't like her then but I do now, I know she's younger than me like old enough to be my daughter young but I can't help it, I think am in love with her.

I tried to run after her but the cab had already left and Jerald did well by leaving because I was going to kill him with my bare hands.

"Son what happened? Why did she leave" asked mother

"You're going to follow her right" cried Chido♀this one is a cry baby, why is she even crying.

"Pamwe azvitadzwa mwana veduwe (maybe it was too much for her)" said Maria, we all know she never liked Anele

"Stop it all of you and go to your rooms" I said and they all

left leaving me with my mother.

"She found out" I said as I held my head and sat on the couch

"What do you mean?"

"Jerald told her everything, he told her that I never wanted to marry her and that I don't like her" I sighed

"But that's not true, you said it yourself that you now like her"

"Yes but Anele doesn't know that. She thinks am just using her so she can give me a child" I said

"But that's why she's here to give you a heir"

"You're not getting me! Anele is different mom I actually love her compared to my other wives whom I married because I was forced by you and dad" I replied

"Kuda get your mind right ok just weeks ago you were begging us to take her back to her parents and now you want her?"

"Well that was before I fell in love with her. I actually love that kid" I said.

"If you love her so much then why did you let her leave?"

"I don't know but what I know is that she'll be back here soon" I said.

I couldn't sleep because I kept tossing and turning trying to figure out a way to get my wife back, yes I said it, she's my wife. I called her mother, I know she's going to help me. I told her what happened and how sorry I was for hurting her daughter but she didn't seem to have a problem with it she said she just wants to see her little girl happy.

Current day

I pleaded with Anele's mother not to go back home for the night that way it'll give Anele the chance to cool down without anyone asking her what happened and why she's back home. We then went to her old school well everybody knows how Anele loves school and that she'll try to go back there so we asked the principal to reject her. I know I sound like the devil right now but it's all for Anele and she's going to thank me in the future. Never in my life had I thought I'd fall in love with a girl old enough to be my daughter♂ love makes us do the craziest things here am I, a 31 year old man obsessed with a 16 year old.

*** Anele ***

I stood by the door looking at my mother, how could she take the one thing that I love? First she sold me to a stranger and now she won't even let me go to school☹️.

"Hey ma!" I said on a low note

"Come here" she ordered and I slowly walked upto her.

"How are you" I asked and she cupped my face and looked at me directly in the eyes.

"Why are you here Anele? Shouldn't you be at your husband's" she asked. Did she really just ask me that?

"I left mum!"

"Why? Did he do anything" she asked as if she wasn't with Kuda.

"Why do I get the feeling you don't even want me here?"

"You shouldn't be here in the first place, you should be at your husband's" she said

"Mum do you hate me that much? That you don't even want me here?"

"Anele how can you even say that? I'd never hate you baby, everything I do is for you" she said

"Then why do you want me to go back to that hell whole, mum I hate it there"

"But you're married nana and you can't just pack it up and leave every time you and your husband fight" she replied

"Mum am wife number 4 why would you let him marry me mum why?"

"Baby he's the Prince he can give you a life I can never give you" she said

"What life mum? How do you sleep at night knowing that your 16 year old daughter is getting touched by a man old enough to be her father? What kind of a mother are you? "I

said and before I knew it a hot slap landed on my cheeks.

"You're ungrateful Anele, I try to be the best mother, I try to keep you happy, and I try to give you everything. Is this how I raised you? You're talking back at me Anele, me! The woman who gave you life" she yelled

"Am sorry 😞"

"Damn right you are! Listen to me and listen carefully, you're going to wipe those tears and you're going to take your bags and go back to your husband do you hear me" she commanded.

"But mum!" I said and she gave me another slap. "Still talking back at me" she asked

"No!"

"Good now there's a car waiting for you outside, take your bags and go" she said

"Ok!" I silently sobbed, the one person I thought had my back just turned on me. I have nowhere to go, I swear if I had money I was going to elope. I took my bags and the driver drove me back to that hell hole. How I am even going to explain why am back♀

[28/01, 15:16] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 10

I rang the bell but no one was answering so decided to let myself in since the door wasn't locked. This is so embarrassing I mean I have done some embarrassing things in my life but this is the worst I just wish the earth could swallow me whole. I left on my own and now am back on my own. I don't want to be here but what choice do I have, one disadvantage of not getting along with your relatives, I should be at their houses as we speak, Thank God no one was in the dining, I went straight to my room with my bags♀️ I have been humbled I won't lie🙌🙌🙌. Just when I thought things would get worse Kuda come out of the bathroom. Why is he using my room♀️he has his own for Christ's sake. I just stood there not knowing what to say...

"Look whose back!" He said "Afternoon!"

I answered "So you're back?"

"Yeah" I whispered, this is embarrassing

"And what made you change your mind Mrs Diale?"

"I didn't change my mind I just don't have anywhere to go" I said

"Does this mean you still don't want to be my wife?"

"Yes!" I answered

"Oh ok well glad you're back" he smiled and he's acting as if he didn't have a hand in all this.

"Thank you!" I said

"So are you going to carry on living with me?"

"What choice do I have" I answered

"Yeah what choice do you have 😊. Does this mean you ready to carry my child?"

"Are you out of your mind" I asked

"Hayi uyalasha i side shame (you're rude)" he chuckled

"You know Ndebele 🤔?"

"Does having a Shona name mean am Shona" he asked well I guess he could hear me all that time I insulted him in Ndebele.

"Am not rude you're e one who makes me like this"

"I guess we started on a wrong foot let me introduce myself am Kudakwashe Diale" he smiled

"And I don't want to be here"

"What if I said I'd change your mind, prove to you that am not as bad as you think I am" he asked.

"Not doing to happen!"

"Anyway 😊 I was about to sleep, do you want to join me" he asked.

"Over my dead body"

"Suit yourself then" he said getting under the covers

"Why do you want to sleep in my bed anyway?"

"Because I feel like it and this is the closest I get to be" he answered

"By sleeping in my bed?"

"Yes it smells like you" he answered

"Well I guess this means am going to sleep in your bed" I said leaving the room well his bed is comfy and big so he's be doing me a huge favour. I still can't believe I won't be going

to school, if this is how marriage is like then I don't want to be part of it.

The following morning I woke up at 5 as usual am so used to waking up early that it has become a habit, I put on my black shorts and a pink tank top then headed to the gym. To my surprise Kuda was there, since when does he work out?

"Morning" I said

"Hope you didn't drool on my pillows" he answered

"Hope you didn't drool on mine"

"And what did I say about wearing those tiny clothes" he asked

"Why are you looking at me in the first place?"

"You are my wife aren't you? Am always going to look at you" he said

"Then get used to seeing me in these tiny clothes your highness. And do you have to mention that am your wife every two minutes?"

"Yes and maybe I should start calling you Mrs Diale" he laughed

"Dream on!" I said leaving the room "Don't you want to work out anymore?"

"Not with you I don't" I replied

"And take off those shorts" he called out. I went back to my room took a shower then went to the kitchen.

"You're back!" Said Chido as she hugged me.

"Hey!"

"I missed you" she said

"I was only gone for a day"

"Yeah but the house was not the same without your loud music and you fighting with Kuda all the time" she laughed

"What am I? Your entertainment?" "Sort of"

she said

"So what are you making?"

"Was making you breakfast but you ruined it" she answered

"Well thanks but why are you making me breakfast♀".

"Because am glad you're back" she answered

"Thanks I guess♀"

Why is everybody suddenly nice to me? Anyway Chido and I had lunch over a light conversation. She really knows how to brighten somebody's day.

"Look who's back" said Maria as she entered the kitchen.

"Hie Maria!"

"I see seducing Jerald didn't work" she said "Maria you know that's not true" said Chido "Shut up Chido I wasn't talking to you" said Maria

"Well am talking to you" said Chido ok maybe I judged her too early it seems she got some fight in her.

"Look at that, Chido finally grew balls" said Maria

"I am tired of you Maria! Why do you think you're better than all of us, just because you're the first wife you think you own the world" answered Chido

"Chido you don't have to..." I said and she interrupted me

"Stay out of this Anele" said Maria

"Is this this about me" I asked, well if they about to start fighting then am not getting involved. From the looks of it these two have some unfinished business, Maria doesn't like Chido because their husband always chooses Chido over her and Maria. I just stood by the kitchen door watching them argue.

"What's going on" Melissa whispered to me "I

have no idea" I answered

"Well let's get out of here before we also get involved" said Melissa

"You're already involved, everyone in the dinning" said Kuda, I guess shit is about to go down. We sat on the same couch all four of us with Kuda sitting on the table facing us. First he looked at me 😏 that's just low how can he think I started all this.

"What's going on? Why are you fighting" Kuda asked.

"Well Anele and I aren't involved" answered Melissa

"Maria started it" said Chido

"Chido I expect this kind of behaviour from Anele not you. No offense Anele!"

"Oh I am offended" I said

"What's going on Maria why are you fighting so early?"

"Tame your wife or I will" said Maria

"Are you talking back at me" asked Kuda and Maria zipped it I guess that's much mush she fears him

"Maria here thinks she's better than all of us just because she's the first wife" answered Chido

"Well one thing for sure is that am better than you because unlike you I can actually give my husband kids" yelled Maria and I looked over to Chido who rushed out crying am sure she must be heart broken.

"Enough both you! Maria to your room now and stop acting like teenagers" yelled Kuda. Mxm so he's saying they should stop acting like me.

"I'll go check on Chido" said Melissa leaving the room. It's now down to me and Kuda, he's still sitting on the table.

"Do you want to go out for breakfast" he asked as if nothing just happened

"No!" I answered standing up "Sit back down"

"Are you going to force me to go out with you now" I asked

"Yes! Take it was punishment for refusing to remove those shorts"

"Why do you have a problem with my shorts anyway" I asked

"You want the truth?"

"Yes" I said

"They kind of a turn on"

"Ok am going to my room before things get awkward" I said

"No! We are going for breakfast" he took my hand and dragged me to the car.

"Wait I have an idea why don't we all go out, all five of us"

"No it's just me and you" he answered how great for all of us.

[29/01, 14:58] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 11

So Kuda and I went for lunch honestly I don't want to be there but he's trying so I thought what the hell let me just go with it although I've already had breakfast but their coffee smells great. We sat by the table and it was the awkward 20 minutes of my life, we've never actually been together not fighting, I don't even know what to talk about. We placed our orders even though I didn't understand the menu so I just ordered toasted bread, eggs and bacon. We had breakfast in silent it's like we are total strangers but if you think of it we kind of strangers because we know nothing about each other.

"Are you full" asked Kuda breaking the silently.

"Yes! Am just eating more food for fun" I answered, he sees that am eating then he asks me if am full, why would I continue eating if am full♀

"Am just messing with you plus you look cute when angry?"

"Aren't you too old to use the word cute" I asked

"Anele bandla am not that old"

"You're twice my age and to me that makes you old" I said

"Who said am twice your age?"

"Please! I don't need to see your ID to tell that you're in your early thirties" I said while we were still talking the waitress came with the cheque. From the looks of it she's in her late twenties and she was flirting with the almighty. Well he's not bad looking, he's actually cute

"Thanks!" Said Kuda as he handed her the money.

"You're welcome and you have a lovely daughter she is a beauty" she said before leaving, I couldn't help but laugh.

"Wow I've never been so offended. Do I look that old" asked Kuda as he laughed with me touching his chest like he's shocked?

"You don't look old am the one who's tiny actually my friends in Primary school used to call me Tiny because I have a small body and am short.

"Nah I think it's the shorts" he said well I didn't know he had a sense of humour 😊 after all he's always keeping a straight face.

*** Kudakwashe ***

I have never seen Anele smiling ever since she started living with me, seeing her smile so much and knowing that I was the reason behind it made my heart rejoice. Truly speaking am offended how can that waitress think Anele is my daughter 😞 she's making me look old in front of my wife.

"Leave my shorts out of this, you're old you're old" she laughed

"So tell me more about this little girl named Anele" I said poking her arm

"Am just Anele nothing more?"

"Come on am sure there's more to you than just your name" I said

"There's nothing to tell" she said and I noticed her mood changing why doesn't she want to tell me about herself.

"Come on Anele don't be like this" "Can we go" she said

"I just want to know you better"

"Fine you wanna know me! I am Anele Tanaka Moyo, someone who doesn't tolerate nonsense now can we go!" she lightly yelled then she stood up and headed to the car.

♂♂What did I do? Did I say something wrong? Anyway we drove back with Anele keeping a straight face I honestly don't know why the sudden mood change. I thought we were getting along.

"Anele" I said "Yes!"

"Did I say something that upset you" I asked "No!"

"We were getting along at the coffee shop what happened. If you don't like talking about yourself tell me and I won't mention it again" I asked

"I don't want to talk about myself" "Ok! Am

sorry" I said

What is she afraid of? Why did she get upset when I asked her about herself? Anyway we got home and she rushed to her room, Chido was crying and had her bags packed♂♂here we go again, the pain of having 4 wives every single one of them wants a piece of me.

"What's wrong Chido" I asked

"I can't do this anymore" she cried "What happened?"

"It's Maria she came to my room and started shouting at me about my barrenness 😞 is it my fault that I can't have children" she cried

"Chido we talked about this, I love you for you. Forget about what Maria said" I hugged her, she took her bags back to her room then minutes later Melissa came all dressed up.

"Going somewhere" I asked

"I told you I was going to see my mother and you promised to have lunch with her"

"Is it today" I asked

"No it's next year, of course it's today" "Give me a minute I'll go change" I said

"Forget it I'll go on my own" she said heading to the door.

"Melissa wait! Am sorry ok it's just that. "

"It's just that you forgot just like you forgot your daughter's birthday. Am tired of your excuses" she said

"Am sorry ok let me make it upto you" "How" she asked

"How about you come sleep in my room tonight"

"Don't even try to sweet talk me out of it" she said folding her arms

"Am sorry Melissa!"

"Fine but you need to make it upto your daughter" she said

"I will"

"Ok then let me get going" she said heading out. Am definitely going to lose weight this year, I went upstairs and went to Maria's room and I found her about to explode with anger sitting on the bed with her arms folded. I went and sat on the bed next to her...

"Being angry doesn't suit you do you know that" I said

"Well if you don't want to see me like this then stop marrying every girl you run into" she answered

"What happened?"

"Why did you marry Anele" she asked, I didn't expect her to ask that and this also means she's wasn't actually mad at Chido she just used her to take out all her anger. *Why did I marry Anele?* Honestly even I don't know, my parents married her not me but that doesn't mean I don't want her in fact I love that kid.

"Where is this coming from" I asked

"Ever since she came into this house things have changed, everything is about Anele. First it was Melissa and I kept quiet then you brought Chido, I didn't say anything. Now Anele ♀a sixteen year Kuda what were you thinking. How do you think this all makes me feel? As your first wife you should have told me. Didn't I satisfy enough that you felt the need to marry 3 more wives" she said with tears running down her cheeks.

"Maria!"

"When you married me I thought that was your way of saying you want to be with you for rest of my life then you go and marry 3 more women. Do you think I enjoy sharing you with other women? Am sorry but this is too much for me" she said

"Look am sorry I didn't know you felt that way but there's nothing I could do, you couldn't give me a heir and know how important that is to my family"

"How is it my fault that am giving you female children maybe you're the one with the problem" she said

"Maria don't start with me ok. You said you'll support me all the way and now you're fighting with your sisters"

"They should respect me" she said

"Give respect in order to get respect and if I hear you mentioning Chido's barrenness I swear I will have 3 wives left"

"So you'll leave me for her" she asked "If you continue acting like a child I will"

"Am sorry!" She said on a low note

"Fine but please stop fighting I need you all to get along. I don't have a favourite I love you all equally"

"Oky" she said as she hugged me.

*** Anele ***

I was sitting by the kitchen chairs with a bowl of ice cream in hands humming to Lionel Richie finally no drama in the house. For the record I changed my shorts am now wearing a black knee length lace dress. I heard the doorbell then I rushed to the door when I opened I nearly dropped my ice cream, there stood a man. He was wearing a maroon chino trousers a white t shirt and black sneakers. He's so handsome with his neatly cut hair and nicely shaved beard. Now this is a man! My heart is about to explode and God did he smell great. 'Anele get yourself together' I said to myself, I cleared my throat before talking....

"Hie!" I smiled

"Hey!" he smiled back at me and God his smile is to die for

"May I help you?"

"Yes! May I see Mr Diale" he asked, his voice is so deep and sweet.

"Yeah sure. Why don't you go take a seat and I'll call him"

"Ok!" He answered sitting down

"Can I get you something to drink?"

"Water will be fine" he answered and I called one of the helpers to get him water while I went to call Kuda, I bagged in without knocking to my surprise I found him sleeping with Maria in his arms and think they just did the deed with this heat. Anyway i went out and knocked since they did not see me.

"Who is it" called Kuda from inside the room

"It's Anele you have a guest downstairs" I answered "I'll be there in a minute" he answered, I went back downstairs and sat on the couch reading my magazine well I can't leave our visitor all by himself. I could feel him undressing me with him eyes which made me feel more uncomfortable...

"Am Andile" he said and I chuckled, even our names rhyme.

"Am Anele!"

"How come I've never seen you around here" he asked

"What do you mean?"

"Am always here, like almost every day but I've never seen you" he said

"Well am usually in my room"

"Hope you didn't wait long" said Kuda sitting on the same couch with me he smells like lavender I guess he took a quick shower

"Nah I just got here" answered Andile

"I see you've met my wife" said Kuda and I could see the shock in Andile's eyes

"She's your wife 😊 Wow I got to admit she is gorgeous" he answered and I smiled a little.

"Anele this is my friend Andile, we have been friends since high school" said Kuda mxm 😞 this means Andile is also old enough to be my father, am so over him. Kuda tried to play lovey dovey but after seeing him with Maria I don't think I'd ever want him to even get close to me....

[30/01, 13:24] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 12

*** Kudakwashe ***

Today I got a visit from Andile well he visits almost every day, Andile is like a little brother to me we have been friends since high school. Our families were close that's how we also got close, we also work together actually we do almost everything together, the only difference between us is that I have 4 wives and he's single which has got me questioning his sexuality. He's still at my place and we having a wonderful time, seems Tiny (Anele) is in a good mood today because she still hasn't left the dining like she usually does when we have visitors. She's just sitting there with her legs crossed minding her business busy with her magazine.

"Is she always this quiet" asked Andile referring to Anele

"Not really she's actually a talker" I answered and Anele stood up and left the room I guess she got tired of us talking and excluding her.

"Man how old is she? She looks so young" Andile whispered to me

"She's actually 16 I chuckled

"This is the 16 year old your parents married for you?"

"Yeah! That's her!" I answered

"I really need to see your parents and give them a high five this time they chose well she's a goddess"

"Yeah she's a beauty and she hates me" I said

"Why? She got married to you didn't she?"

"Yeah but she says she hates it here and didn't want to be here in the first place and that she'll rather die than be here"
I sighed

"Well it was an arranged marriage and she got married to an old man 😊 no offense"

"Am not that old why does everyone keep saying that" I said

"To her you are and loosen up a little. You scaring her how you expect her to be comfortable around you when you always have a straight face and knowing you I bet you always yelling at her"

"That kid spits out poison wait till you hear her talk" I answered

"Because that's how girls her age act and behave"

"How do I get her to like me when she hates the site of me and mentions every two minutes that she doesn't want to be here" I said

"Man she's 16 of course she doesn't want to be here but you need to put yourself in her shoes"

"What do you mean" I asked

"Unlike your boring ass wives Anele is young and full of energy, her mind is full of having fun and from the looks of it you caging her"

"I don't even bother her she only stays in her room. I let her do what she wants except do out of the house of course" I said

"But kids her age are at school, partying and doing stuff that 16 year olds do"

"I still don't follow" I said, he's confusing me.

"I mean start thinking like her if you want to get along with her"

"Do you think she'll ever like me" I asked "Nahh she's too hot for you"

"Dude that's my wife" I laughed "But jokes aside she is gorgeous" "Yeah she's a Beauty!" I answered

"So I was thinking, how about we make her the face of the company?" He asked, we own a Fashion company, a Restaurant you two clubs not to mention the family business.

"Anele? No man I don't want her at my work place plus I don't want my wives to work that's my job as their husband" I answered

"She's not working, she's just taking a few photos then we use her face on our magazine cover"

"I don't know" I said

"Come on man it's not even going to take an hour"

"Fine but just this once" I said

Andile and I chilled out for some time then he left after dinner well he doesn't have anything to do or a wife to run to since he's single. I just feel like sleeping and never waking up, it's been a long day but I have to wait for Melissa because I 'owe' her and she's not yet back? I just want to go to bed.

*** Anele ***

After dinner I went and took a nice long bubble bath while talking on the phone with Rutendo well I was telling her about Andile even though I have no idea why am talking about him because am over him.

Her: So how are things going with hubby?

Me: Never ask me that and second his name is Kudakwashe

Her: Why do you hate him so much? Me: I

don't hate him

Her: I haven't never heard you say anything nice about him

Me: Because there's nothing nice about him

Her: Girl you don't even know him

Me: i know that he's old and has four wives

Her: What does he like, what is he allergic to, is he a good listener?

Me:

Her: Just give him the chance and see what kind of a man he is

Me: If I give him the chance I'll also be giving him the opportunity to get in my pants and am not ready

Her: If he's a gentleman he'll wait for you

Me: The thought of him touching me makes me want to throw up.

Her: Sooner or later he's going to get in your pants because you're his wife.

Me: He can't force me if I don't want to.

Her: Let me ask you something, do you like him Me:

He's old enough to be my father

Her: Anele do you like the man or not?

Me: I don't!

Her: What if he was your age? Would you like him?

Me: Well. Look Rutendo I have to go.

I then hung up as soon as I saw the door open, I swear if its Kuda am going to flip. A little girl entered and she doesn't even have her front teeth.

"Hie" she said

"Hey little girl" I smiled

"What are you doing in there?" 😊 kids "Well I was

bathing but am done now" "Are you also my

father's wife" she asked "Well sort of"

"You're pretty and I love your hair" she giggled "Thanks

cuties now can you pass me that towel"

"Here you go!" She said handing me the towel and I wrapped it around my body.

"Am Anele what's your name?" "Am

Lesedi" she answered "Wow that's a nice

name!"

"I am named after my late aunt" she said and who named a child after a dead person then tells the child.

"How old are you? "Am 5" she answered "Who's your mother?"

"Melissa!" She said

"No wonder you look like her" "And how old are you" she asked "Well am 16"

"That's old" she giggled we'll only if she knew. I then put on my night gown.

"I was going to bed do you want to join me?" "Yes!"

"So Lesedi what do you like" I asked "You ask a lot of questions"

"Okay! Good night then" I chuckled

The following day I was woken up by Lesedi playing with my hair. She was braiding me up, I checked the time and it was 4:30.

"Hey!" I said as I sat up

"Do you like what I did to your hair" she asked

"Well it's not that bad" I said looking at myself in the mirror. I changed into my gym clothes and headed downstairs, everyone was up well that's the first.

"Good morning" I said then noticed Melissa was crying. Well no one answered me when I greeted them so am just going to go to the gym. After my workout I went past the dining and everyone was still in the dining even Andile was here now. He walked up to me.

"Hey!" He said trying to hug me but I took a step back well I don't like being touched.

"Hey! Sorry am sweaty" I said

"No wonder you look do great you exercise" he mumbled

"Excuse me!" I said

"I said Melissa is really devastated"

"What's going on anyway? Why is she crying" I asked

"She can't find her daughter she says she last saw her last night and she's searched all over the house. She can't find her"

"You mean he daughter Lesedi" I asked and everyone turned their attention to me

"Did you see my daughter, please tell me my little girl is alright" asked Melissa

"Yeah she's sleeping in my room she came last night" I answered and Melissa rushed upstairs followed by Chido and Maria

"And you were quiet all along" yelled Kuda

"I didn't know you were looking for her" I answered

"God Anele! You saw that everyone was worried why didn't you ask what was going on" he said

"I didn't know it was because of Lesedi plus everyone was ignoring me"

"She's fine now that's all that matters" said Andile

"Here we are worried sick and you knew where my daughter was, all you care about is your stupid workout" yelled Kuda

"Well did anyone bother to ask me, seems am always excluded in everything" I replied

"Don't talk back at me!" He yelled

"What did ?" Before I could finish a hot slap landed on my cheeks.

*He didn't. *

Did he really just slap me for something I didn't even know?
This is why I distance myself from *man* because they are
just abusers, he's turning out to be just like my father.

"Did you just slap" I asked

"Am sorry Anele! I let my anger control me and am so sorry"
answered Kuda.

"Do you know I can sue you for that" I said

"Ok why we all don't calm down and talk about what just
happened" said Andile

"There's nothing to talk about he can't just lay his hands on
me and expect me to just leave it" I said

"Look Anele am sorry!" Said Kuda "You're

not sorry" I said yelled

"Anele I swear I have never laid a hand on a woman" said
Kuda

"Well you messed with the wrong girl" I said rushing to my
room

*** Andile ***

Ok! I did not see that coming.....

"What is wrong with you" I asked Kuda

"I don't know! I just lost it" answered Kuda

"I have told you a thousand times Kuda no matter how angry you are never lay your hands on a woman"

"I don't know what came over me! I hate it when she talks back at me" he said

"Well if you thought she hates then now she has a reason to"

"Should I go talk to her" he asked

"Let me try talking to her first" I said heading to her room. I got there and knocked

"Go away!" She called out "Anele it's me! Open up"

"Come to finish what your friend started" she said as she opened the door

"May I come in?" "No!" She answered

"I just wanted to check on you"

"I look fine don't I" she said and I found myself smiling now this is a woman, feisty and strong she's not even crying. Now I see why Kuda is so drawn to her.

"I also wanted to apologize on Kuda's behalf"

"What's wrong with his mouth, can't he apologize on his own" she asked

"Oh you want him to apologize on his own. Hold that thought!" I said calling Kuda and he came rushing.

"Am listening" Anele said as she folds her hands

"Look can we at least sit down" said Kuda

"I don't want to sit down and if you don't say what you want I will slam this door in your face" said Anele and I couldn't help but laugh 😊 Maybe I should get popcorn.

"Wow! Look Anele am sorry Anele I didn't mean to slap you" said Kuda

"You call that an apology" Anele asked

"Am trying (he yelled) ♂I didn't mean to yell and am sorry" he said and not to mention am just watching them argue.

"I forgive you" said Anele

"You do!" I asked because I honestly don't believe her

"Yes but on one condition" said Anele 😊 I knew it.

"Anything you want just name it" said Kuda

"I want a private tutor until I write my exams because I am writing my O'level"

"Anele we talked about this" said Kudakwashe

"Then consider yourself not forgiven" she said about to close the door.

"Wait! If that's what it takes for you to forgive me then it's done" said Kuda

"Good! Now leave" she said closing the door "She's

a keeper" I whispered to Kuda

"She's also a headache" he said

..

[30/01, 23:17] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By Cathrine Phiri

Chapter 13

*** Kudakwashe ***

God knows I have tried to be polite with Anele but she brings out the worst in me, she makes me feel weak as a man. No man wants a woman who doesn't respect him, I just don't get how she's so bitter, and all I do is try to make her happy but just can't see that. Maria was right ever since she came into the picture things changed, I changed Anele has changed me. I really love Anele but her attitude makes her less attractive.

"Morning!" Said Maria as she entered my room

"Hey!"

"Is everything ok?" She asked "Yeah

why?"

"You don't look yourself" she said

"It's nothing! You don't look good yourself, is everything ok"

"There's something I need to tell you" she said

"Ok what is it?"

"Am pregnant!" She said on a low note "No

way! You're pregnant! How long?" "A month"

she answered

"You don't look happy. Is the baby ok" I asked as soon as I saw tears clouding in her eyes.

"The baby is not yours" she cried "What 😞"

"Am sorry!" She said

"What do you mean the baby isn't mine?"

"Am sorry ok it's just that you never had time for me ever since Melissa and Chido came into the picture and I needed my husband's attention 😞" he said

"Maria I didn't chose to marry them, you know this is all my parent's idea"

"But you're a grown man Kuda and you can't let your parents keep treating you like a little boy" she yelled

"It's not that easy"

"Kuda I don't want to share my man with anyone" she said

"Is that why you went and got pregnant with another man's child?"

"Am sorry!" She said

"How long have you been together?" "8

months" she answered

"Bathong! 😞"

"Am sorry ok but you hardly gave me your attention " she cried

"Maria there's 4 of you and 1 me, how do you expect me to keep up with all of your needs"

"Well count me out because my baby and I are leaving. We're going to live with my baby daddy" she said

"Why Maria? Why would you do this to me? You know I love you"

"If you loved me you wouldn't have married 3 more wives plus how do you expect me to believe you when you tell all of us the same thing" she said

"It's not like I had a choice! You know how my parents are"

"You had a choice Kuda, you were supposed to tell them *No*" she said as she got up "Maria

please don't leave!" "Why" she asked

"Because I love you Maria and I need you"

"Seems love alone isn't enough because if you really loved me you wouldn't hurt me by marrying 3 other wives. I really love you Kuda but I will not settle for less" she said then left the room.♂♂ Maria was my first wife, my first love. I can't believe she's leaving let alone that she's pregnant with another man's child. Maria and I have a daughter, she's 8♂ Maria is right I shouldn't let my parents make decisions for me, am 31 for Christ's sake. Am a man, am a husband and am

a father. Am way old to be taking orders from my parents I know they mean well but nothing good has come out of it. I just sat on the bed thinking about how this wasn't my idea of marriage, I never saw myself with 4 wives. I just wanted to marry one wife have children no matter which gender. There was a knock on the door and it can only mean two things, it's either it's one of the helpers or Anele because she never enters without knocking.

"Come in!"

"This came for you" said Anele as she handed me an envelope.

"Thanks!" I sighed "Are you ok" she asked "Yeah am good"

"I know I have been a headache to you and am sorry" she said

"It's not you am just tired"

"I know just the thing to make you feel better" she said getting on the bed then she started massaging my shoulders.

"What did I do to deserve this? Or you just looking for the opportunity to slit my throat"

"Let's say it's my way of saying thank you for letting me continue with my O'level" she said

"Well you did threaten not to forgive me if I didn't"

"And am sorry but sometimes we got to use force to get what we want" she chuckled

"Are you sure about that?" "What do you mean" she asked

"I mean would you mind if I do this" I said as pushed her down and got on top of her

"What are you doing?"

"You said it yourself, sometimes you got to use force to get what you want" I said tickling her

"Wait! Wait! That's not what I meant" she giggled

"Really? I thought this is what you meant"

"No! Stop ticking me" she said "Only if you ask me nicely" "Stop!" She said

"Ask me nicely" I said and my phone just had to ruin the moment mxm I had her wrapped around my finger. I let go of Anele and she ran out of the room. It's my mother♂ let's hope she hasn't married another wife for me.

Me: Hey Ma!

Her: What's this nonsense that am hearing? Me:

What now? ♂

Her: What's this nonsense am hearing from Maria Me:

Mum let me handle my wives ok

Her: Clearly you can't, how does your wife get into an affair with another man and gets pregnant without you even noticing?

Me: Well maybe if they weren't so many I've have actually have time to notice such things

Her: Kuda don't talk to me like that

Me: Look mum Maria made her choice and she said it herself that the baby isn't mine plus I can't stay with her if she's carrying another man's child so the best option is to let her go.

Her: But she's your wife

Me: We had a traditional wedding which means in other words we're not legally married so she's good to go

Her: Since when did you become so weak? You can't let her get away with this just like that

Me: Like I said let me handle my wives

Her: Fine but we're not growing any younger and we need a grandchild soon

Me: You have two grandchildren mum

Her: A male grandchild damn it (she yelled) so now its upto Anele, knock her out and soon!

Me: Are you listening to yourself? She's 16! That could get me arrested

Her: It's not like we holding her hostage

Me: We kind of holding her against her will because she doesn't want to be here

Her: Well you better start convincing her, if you don't give us an heir then consider us crowning your little brother as the King

Me: I have told you mum I don't care about the throne

Her: As the first born child it's your duty Kudakwashe

Me: Bite me!

Her: We need a heir Kuda or prepare for number 5 Me:

Mum are you trying to kill me?

Her: I will if you don't give me a male grandchild

Me: Fine! But can you give me time to talk to Anele first.

Her: You have 2 months!

Me: ♂

Her: I mean it Kuda! Me: Bye mum!

I just wish I was born in a normal family like other people. My mother is not backing down and knowing her she will bring number 5 if Anele doesn't get pregnant soon. Just when I thought things could get any worse Chido bagged into my room...mm

"Really Kuda!" She shouted pacing up and down the room

"You're making me dizzy Chido! Why don't you sit down and tell me what's wrong" I said

"I don't want to sit down! You let Anele go to school yet you said I'd have to get pregnant first before going back to school and from the looks of it Anele isn't even pregnant"

"Look Chido it's not like am having any favourites" I said

"You are! You didn't let me finish my diploma because 'I was supposed to do my duties as a wife' like you said"

"Am sorry ok" I said

"Look I don't have nothing against Anele but you promised to treat us all equally"

"I don't have favourites it's just that Anele is still young and she needs to finish her O'level, I owe her that much" I said

"Just like I needed to finish my Diploma"

"Am sorry! How can I make it upto you" I asked "Can

I visit my mother the coming week?"

"Done!" I said hugging her

♂♂♂See what I go through every day then my mother wants to bring number 5. I really need a vacation. As usual Andile came over and we watched the game, we love football.

"So did you talk to her" Andile asked "Not yet but I will"

"When because the magazine has to be printed by the end of tomorrow" he said

"Fine I'll go ask her in the kitchen" I said as I went to Anele in the kitchen, I don't know why she likes doing the dishes because we have helpers. She looked great in her floral dress and God she smelled great. I hugged her from behind and she flipped♂

"What is your problem" she yelled

"Am sorry I didn't mean to scare you" I said

"How many times do I have to tell you that I don't like being touched" she shouted

"I just hugged you!"

"That's touching me and I don't like it" she said

"Why? And why won't you let me get near you?" "I don't want to talk about it" she said rushing out"

♂♂♂♂♂♂♂♂

[31/01, 20:26] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 14

*** Kudakwashe ***

What did I do? I just hugged her then the next thing she's lashing out at me♂Sometimes I just don't get her just moments ago we were laughing together. Why is it so hard to get along with her, one moment she's nice the next she's the ice queen. I went back to the dinning and found Andile laughing with his phone...

"Let's hope that's a girl because am starting to think you're gay" I said as I joined him on the couch

"With all the beautiful women out there 😊 being gay is the last thing I want to be"

"You're 28 for Christ's sake do you want to die without any children" I asked

"Well you're the one you squeezed the fun out of marriage and kids"

"What did I do" I asked

"I have seen you fighting with your wives and trust me I don't think I can handle such drama in my life"

"So you want to die alone" I asked

"Well you can give me one of your wives 😊 you know help a brother out"

"Please take one! These women are driving me crazy" we laugh

"I was thinking of Chido but she's too innocent and she's a cry baby. Then Melissa well that one seems like she's the kind that can beat the shit out of man or maybe I should take Maria"

"You won't believe it, Maria left me" I sighed "What did you do?"

"I didn't do anything" I replied

"Then why would she leave, Maria loves you compared to your other pretenders mxm especially Melissa"

"I don't know why you hate her but she's the mother of my daughter and soon you'll have to get along with her" I said

"She said I was a bad influence to you imagine me. Am an angel and if you think about it you're the bad influence here"

"An angel!" I laughed

"Anyway why did Maria leave?"

"Long story short she's pregnant and the baby isn't mine" I replied

"Wooh how did this happen?"

"Honestly I don't know but she said something about me not giving her the attention she needs" I answered

"Well one thing I know about women is that these devils like attention for than anything. Show me a woman that doesn't like attention and I'll show you my arse"

"No one wants to your arse man" I said

"Anyway speaking of women what did number 4 say about being on our cover?"

"I didn't even get to talk to her because she was yelling at me" I said

"What did you do this time?"

"I just hugged her from behind and she lost it" I said

"Maybe you just caught her off guard or you scared her with your huge arms, have you seen Anele 😊 she can fit in my laptop bag"

"I don't know! It's just that Anele bottles stuff up, she doesn't want to talk about herself, and she doesn't want to talk about her family or her past. How do we get to know each other if she can't even hold a proper conversation with me" I said

"Try making her feel at ease around you. Remember she's just a kid the only thing that comes to her mind when she sees you is that you want to sleep with her"

"But that's not it" I said

"But to her that's what she thinks. You have to make her trust you, make her let her guard down when she's around you trust you'll thank me later"

"Wow you're really good at this" I chuckled "Oh my God am turning into my mum"

"Can you imagine my mother threatened to bring number 5 if I don't get Anele pregnant" I said

"You also shouldn't let your mother control you, you too old for that shit".

"You're not helping" I sighed

"Well if she brings number 5 can I have Anele?" "You know I love that kid" I said

"Your heart is all over the place, just now you were sad about Maria"

"I love them all" I said

"But you're in love with one of them". "You're right!" I said

"A word of advice one can never divide attention. You can only focus on one of them at a time"

"But how do I give them all the attention they need" I asked

"I think they should have their houses then take turns to come see you"

"Who knew you could think of something so clever" I laughed

"Mxm!"

"But watch out, once you get Anele to like you she'll have you dancing to her tune trust me I have dated a juvenile before these girls are devils, they'll have you attending Justin Bieber concerts"

"You never told me about dating a juvenile" I laughed

"Well am telling you now"

"Anyway let me go talk to my wife" I said "Ok say

hie to her for me"

"I will. Aren't you leaving" I said going upstairs

"No! And please call one of your wives to come keep me company" he called out and I just laughed heading to Anele's room, I knocked once then entered, I found her struggling to put on her necklace.

"Need help" I asked

"Yeah!" She answered then she turned lifting her hair up, I actually love her natural look.

"Done" I said as I sat on the bed

"Thank you" she said as she sat on the far edge and I followed her then sat next to her holding her soft hands.

"We need to talk" I said

"Ok!" She said as she lifted her eyes and looked at me, she looks so innocent with her big brown eyes this kid is driving me crazy.

"Why do you hate me" I asked well that's the first question that came to my mind.

"I don't hate you! I just hate this, I don't want to be married"

"Did your mother force you to get married to me" I asked

"She never even told me that I was getting married"

"I didn't know! But you're here now and you're my wife either way we have to start getting along" I said

"Ok!"

"Look Anele if you want this to work then you're going to have let me in, let me show you that am not as bad as you think I am. Let me love you" I said and I saw tears clouding in her eyes.

"I don't know!"

"What are you so afraid of? I'd never do anything to hurt you" I said

"I'll be your wife! I'll give you a child if that's what you want but I can't promise you that I'll love you"

"Why not!" I asked

"Because I don't know how to love ok, I have never been in love with anyone. I don't know what love feel like, no one has shown me love in my life my life revolves around pain and suffering"

"Then give me the chance to let you experience that" I said and she just nodded and I just held her in my arms, I could feel her tears on my shirt. I think beneath the bitter Anele there's the real her that's broken and is screaming for help. Her phone rang and she answered it and put it on speaker.....

Anele: Baba! (Dad)

Voice: So you got married and didn't even call me.

Anele: Even I didn't know I was getting married, I thought Ma! Told you.

Voice: She didn't and I didn't know you were a whore like you mother. Mxm how can you get married to someone's husband

Anele: Baba! 😞

Voice: And tell that husband of yours that I want some money, he can't just live with you without my permission plus am the reason you exist in the first place.

Anele:

Voice: Hey wena Anele I....

I picked the phone up and ended the call, I looked at Anele who was playing with her hands.

"Are you ok" I asked

"Am fine" she answered and it's like it didn't even shake her

"You can talk to me"

"I said am fine!" She answered "Look

Anele. "

"I said am fine ok what do you want from me" she yelled

"You don't have to go through this alone"

"Well I want to" she said as she stood up "Let me help you"

"Am fine I don't want anyone feeling sorry for me" she yelled then opened the door, signalled me to get out. I don't want to piss her off so I might as well leave. I headed downstairs to Andile...

"Did you ask her?" he said "No!" I sighed

"Why do I get a feeling you scared of her, maybe I should ask her myself"

"Please do" I answered, I can't help but feel sorry for Anele. No wonder she's so bitter, she shuts out the world because she's afraid of getting hurt.

"Oh there she is" said Andile as she saw Anele heading to the kitchen then she called her.

"Hie" smiled Anele as they shook hands it's like nothing happened

"Hey! I have a business proposal" said Andile "Am listening" said Anele as she folded her arms "I want you to be the face of our company"

"If it involves cameras then count me out because I am camera shy" said Anele, yet she's the most confident person I've ever met.

"Just a few pics and we'll be done" said Andile

"Fine but any funny business am walking away" said Anele before heading to the kitchen

[01/02, 19:06] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 15

*** Anele ***

Maria left the house, I can't help but feel like it's my fault, and ever since I came into the house it seems I changed everything or so says Kuda. So am doing am lessons now and the teachers are very nice everything is going well am doing my 9 subjects with 9 different teachers and I hope I pass.

(On the phone with Rutendo)

Me: He was like give me the chance to prove that I love you
let me love you Anele

Her: 😊 Come on Anele he's trying, at least meet him half way

Me: I want to but I can't I don't know why

Her: Is it the age difference?

Me: Yes! That man is almost the same age as my mother plus
the fact that we all sharing him makes it all disgusting. How
am I supposed to believe he loves me when he tells it to
other women?

Her: Why don't you talk to him and tell him that

Me: I don't know! I don't want his other wives hating me. It's
too much that I made one of them leave.

Her: She really left because of you 😬

Me: I don't know but I kind of feel like it's my fault. That
woman hated my gut

Her: Sorry friend

Me: I hate this place chommie, not a day goes by without any
one fighting it's drama after drama Kuda just has to fight
with one of us, it's either he's shouting about his clothes not
being ironed or breakfast being late.

Her: I thought you had helpers for that.

Me: Sometimes I think he does it on purpose, he just enjoys
yelling

Her: I can imagine the drama, maybe you should start a reality show 😊 something like the *Diale wives*

Me: You're crazy 😊😊 Look I got to go and say hie to Anita for me

Her: I will! Take care! Me: Love you!

Her: Tell that to your husband Me: you crazy!

Her: bye!

I put my phone down and looked at myself one more time in the mirror. I was trying on Kuda's shirts and taking pics. I've always wanted to do that you know like in the movies when the wife wears her husband's shirt, I think its dope. Kuda went out with Melissa and Chido so I was in his closet trying on his shirts.

"I think the blue one looks good on you"

"How long have you been standing there" I said as I turned and saw him leaning on the door

"Long enough!"

"I thought you went out" I said

"Yeah we're back and Andile is waiting for you downstairs he said the shoot is today"

"Right! I had forgotten about that" I said

"Yeah because you were busy trying on my shirts"

"Sorry about that" I said

"It's ok and hurry Andile doesn't like waiting" "You not coming" I asked

"I have a meeting in an hour but don't worry you're in good hands, Andile will take good care of you"

"Ok then let me go change" I said the he took out his phone then took a pic

"Maybe you should wear my shirts more often they look good on you" he said

"What happened to 'don't wear tiny clothes" I asked

"On second thought don't become I might end up raping you. Because I will".

"😊Did you just take a pic" I asked "Yes!"

"May I see" I asked

"No! It's for my eyes only"

"Just pray I don't get hold of that phone because am deleting it" I said getting out of the closet then he followed me

"You wouldn't dare" he laughed

"Can you turn I need to change back to my clothes"

"Really! We still doing this" he said and he turned

"Yes!"

"So how was class" he asked "Good and awkward"

"What do you mean awkward" he asked.

"It's not every day that your 50 year old teacher calls you 'my lady' although I keep insisting that they should use my name"

"Well you are royalty aren't you" he said "By marriage"

"Can I turn now" he asked "Yeah😊"

"Well you're the Prince's wife now and you deserve the respect. And you'll have people watching your every move especially the media those people would do everything to get a story so please when in public try by all means not to do anything silly" he said

"Yes your highness" I rolled my eyes

"And please Anele stop dissing your guards those people are there to protect you"

"Protect me from what? The cabbages at the supermarket" I asked

"🤔Hayi I give up🙄"

"Quick question you're the Prince right, meaning your father is the King right but king where" I asked

"First of all he's not a king he's a Chief. Our surname is Diale meaning were Sotho"

"Okay so he's like chief Azwindini from Muvhango does he also have many wives like you" I asked

"🤔No! It's just my mother but he has 8 children"

"And you're the first born so if the first born is 31 then how old is the last born" I asked

"Ok that's enough, Andile is waiting for you" "Ok

then Prince Kudakwashe!" I curtsied "That's the first"

"And the last" I closed the door.

This is the first time holding a conversation with Kuda without fighting, I then headed to Andile who sure knows how to make himself at home because he had his feet on the table.

"What took you so long" he said as he stood up

"Sorry I couldn't find my shoes" I lied

"Ok then after you my lady" he said leading me out the door

"I have a test tomorrow so I need to be back home by 4"

"Yeah by 5 you'll be back" he said opening the car door for me

"I said 4"

"Got it by six o'clock" he said

"Don't make me regret agreeing to all this"

We drove you to their so called company and I have never seen anything like that, the place is beautiful. Even the workers are *A* class, I felt like I was naked because everyone was dresses to kill.

"And she's quiet" said Andile as he wrapped his arm around my shoulders.

"I don't like being touched" I pushed him off

"Cute!" He said pulling me towards him

"Continue touching me and your friend will moan you"

"Feisty" he laughed

"What's up with you? Quit touching me" "Will you stop complaining" he said "Well get your hands of me"

"Don't tell at me, am older than you remember" he squeezed my cheeks

"What is your problem?"

The shoot went well but I was tired I don't know how models do it because this is tiring. All that costume change is just too much plus am not a professional so I'd laugh and ruin the picture then we start again but in the end we pulled it through.

*** Andile ***

After the shoot Anele and I went to get something to eat since Mrs Juvenile wouldn't stop complaining, after that I drove her back home. My phone buzzed and it was Kuda....

Me: Before you say anything we're on our way back

Him: Ok but that's not why I called, I wanted to tell you that we went to see Lesedi's performing at her school so can you keep Anele company until I come back

Me: Ok but she's sleeping and you were right she is a handful 🙄

Him: That's Anele for you

Me: So what time are you coming back? Him: 3

hours tops

Me: Okay

We got to the house and Anele wouldn't wake up so I had to carry her in which wasn't much trouble because she's very light. I placed her on the couch, for some reason I knelt beside her, moved her curly hair out of her face. I smiled by myself, she's kind of cute with her pink-ish lips I won't lie am tempted

"Andile snap out of it" I said to myself [02/02,

18:18] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 16

*** Anele ***

(2 months later)

These past 2 months have been the greatest moments of my life, turns out Kuda isn't as bad as I thought he was although I still don't fully trust him but at least now we don't fight like we used to. Andile and Kuda agreed to making me the face of their company well they begged me until I agreed. Think of it, a poor girl from a small town now in the magazine 🙌 Ain't the Lord good.

"Anele what's taking so long" Kuda called out.

"Am coming! 5 more minutes" I said putting on my other shoe then looked at myself in the mirror checking my dress. Am wearing a long body hugging black dress.

"You said that 20 minutes Anele ♂ God you're never ontime" said Kuda

"Am done ok! Am done" I said getting my bag and rushing down stairs.

"You look amazing" said Kuda.

"Do you think it's too much" I asked

"It's perfect" he pulled me towards him and kissed my forehead.

"We'll be back after dinner so don't wait up for us" said Kuda to Melissa who was watching TV, Chido is at her mother's.

"Whatever it's not like this is the first time you leaving me all by myself" she clucked. I don't know what her problem is these days because she's all bitter it's like we swapped places 😊.

"Maybe she should come with us" I said to Kuda.

"You know I can't do that! The media is going to be there and we don't want to draw any attention" he answered well we going to this business party ♀

"Yeah take your wife Anele I don't want to go anyway" she said

"Maybe you should take her instead" I insisted.

"There's no time Anele plus you have to be there" said Kuda

"Yeah Anele listen to your husband" said Melissa walking away and I tried to follow her but Kuda pulled me back.

"I'll talk to her when I come back" said Kuda

"Maybe you should take her I don't mind staying and am tired"

"No! I want to go with you" he said leading me out, honestly I feel bad because Kuda has been spending more time with me, it's like his other wives don't exist to him anymore. I think that's why Chido is always at her mother's.

We went to the party and am starting to fit in, I even made a friend or two well they are one of the models, even though Kuda doesn't like me having friends. Kuda was hardly with me at the party, he was busy running around talking to clients.

"Hie!" Said one lady "Hey!" I smiled

"So you're Kuda's wife" "Yes" I answered

"Aren't you too young to get married?"

"Well you know what they say, age is just a number" I fake smiled, I hate it when people ask me that. "Isn't Kuda old for you" yes he's old so what.

"So do you love him" she asked "Excuse me?"

"Oh sorry♀where are my manners, am Simone Diale" she said reaching out for a hand shake.

"Right Kuda's little sister! Am sorry it's just that I haven't meet the whole family yet. Am Anele Moyo"

"You mean Mrs Diale! Yeah I know about you 😊 Kuda doesn't stop talking about you" she said

"Good things I hope"

"Something like that" she laughed before walking away then I looked over to Kuda so was busy with his clients, I looked at him and smiled by myself.

"Don't tell me you're falling for him" said a voice and I turned it was Andile

"What if I am" I bit my lower lip looking at Kuda

"You deserve someone who's going to love you and treat you like a queen that you are"

"Andile are you high" I asked as soon as I noticed that he can't even stand properly

"Am sober as a dead person" he laughed

"That's not even a saying .How much did you drink?"

"Not much. If I can still stand then it means am fine" he said then he almost fell and leaned over.

"Okay you should get home! Give me your car keys"

"How sweet, you want to drive me home" he said handing me his keys well Kuda made me take driving lessons even

though I don't have an license yet but I sure know how to drive. I helped Andile to the car then called Kuda...

Him: Hey baby

Me: Hey! Andile is wasted so am driving him home.

Him: Ok drive safe

"Hey Kuda! Your wife is talking me home" Andile yelled

Him: Don't take too long ok. And drive safe!

Me: I will

Him: Ok I love you! Me: Bye!

Well am not yet using the *L* word. Anyway I drove Andile to his place, I know the directions because Kuda and I have once been there. We got there and I helped him inside the house with him singing I swear if alcohol makes people like this then I don't want to taste it.

"Asambe Nono! Siyolal' embhedeni" this was Andile singing, I have never seen him like this. There's no way I can help him up the stairs because he's huge so instead I left him by the couch.

"I have to get going" I said

"You're leaving me!" He sulked and for someone his age it doesn't suit him at all.

"I have to get back to my husband"

"Well I might as well tell you this" he said "Tell me what?"

"I like you Anele! I fell in love with you that day we went for your first shoot, I know you're married to my best friend but I can't help it I have feeling for you" he said

"This is just alcohol talking" I chuckled the next thing he was snoring♀I took a throw that was on the couch arm and covered him with it then went back to the party. I found Kuda waiting for me well only a few people were left, I guess it means the party is over. I walked up to Kuda...

"Hey!" He said

"Can we go home? Am tired and my feet are killing me" I said

"Just a moment there's someone I have to meet before I go"

"My feet hurt" I sulked well it has been a long week, I have school and being a model😊you heard me right am a model now.

"Fine! Let's go" he said well he hardly says no these days. Honestly now that I have gotten used to him ages is really just a number.

"Can I sleep over at your room today" he asked

"We talked about this Kuda, you sleep in your room and I sleep in mine"

"I won't do anything Anele" he sighed as he started the car

"Well you haven't been with your other wives the past month and I think you should go to Melissa she's lonely"

"I don't want to go to Melissa" he said well he insists on sleeping in my room even though we have never been intimate

"You're not being fair Kuda" I said well he lets me call him by his name now

"Am sleeping in your room and that's final" "What happened to not having favourites" I asked "Am not changing my mind"

Kuda has been spending u lot of time with me forgetting that am not his only wife and he's turning me against my sister wives although Chido doesn't care but Melissa🙌🙌.

*** Kudakwashe ***

Anele and I are getting along so well that sometimes I forget that I have other wives, beneath that rudeness she's actually a great person...

"Morning!" Said Melissa sitting on the bed next to me. I was putting on my shoes because I have a meeting and am late.

"Hey!"

"Do you have a second" she asked

"Am afraid I don't, I have a meeting in 20 minutes and am late"

"Please I really need to talk to you" she said "Ok what's up?"

"You even sound like her" she folded her arms

"What are you talking about?"

"Never mind" she said trying to walk away and I pulled her back.

"What is it Melissa"

"It's Anele! Everything is about her, everything is about her. You never have time for me, you haven't even touched me in a month. Asi hauchandide (you don't love me anymore)" she said well I can tell she's angry because she's using Shona.

"Melissa I've been busy with work! Where do you think the money you spend shopping comes from"

"Kuda you were working since I came into this house what changed, how come all of a sudden you're just busy. All you do is go on business meeting, business trips worse you go with Anele. What about me and your daughter" she asked

"Melissa I have a meeting ok"

"Of course you don't time because you spending all of your time with Anele. Anele this! Anele that am sick of it" she said leaving the room.

♂♂♂As much as I hate to say this but Andile was right. One can't share attention, I can't focus on all of them at the same time....

[04/02, 15:00] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 17

*** Kudakwashe ***

I don't have time to be chasing Melissa right now because am late for my meeting so I took my briefcase and hurried downstairs and to my surprise my parents were there my dad never comes to my house unless it's an emergency. Why did they have to come now, I have a meeting to get to. I looked at their faces and they weren't happy♂ I just hope it's not about the baby. Before I could even greet them my father interrupted me...

"Sit down Kudakwashe" he commanded in a firm voice "I'd love to but I have a meeting to rush to" I answered "Am not asking you Kudakwashe! Sit down" him yelled♂ "Ok! What's so important" I asked

"We gave you 2 months" said mother👩♂ I forgot about that "Ahh! Is that why you stopping me from going to my meeting plus I need more time" I said

"Time is what we don't have, what's stopping you because we know that you and Anele are getting along now" my father asked

"It's just that I've been busy!"

"Too busy to get your wife pregnant" mother chuckled

"I'll talk to you guys later I really have to get going this is an important meeting and I can't miss it" I said

"Sit down Kuda you're not going anywhere" my father commanded. My phone buzzed and it was a landline, I excused myself and went to the kitchen

Me: Diale!

Voice: You realize your meeting is about to start (it's Anele)

Me: Something came up and I can't make it, you're going to have to step in for me

Her: You're kidding right? I know nothing about fashion.

Me: Come on Anele you helped me with the pitch am sure you got a thing or two

Her: I don't think I can do this Me: Just do your best!

Her: What about Andile? Me: There's no time

Her: But if I mess up don't blame me Me: Just do your best

Her: Bye

Me: Love you!

I hung up and took a deep breath thinking about what excuse to tell my parents, I know the deal was to make Anele

pregnant and give them a grandchild but I don't think that's what I want anymore. Anele is just young I don't want to rush her, I don't want to ruin her future just to please my parents. I want her to finish school and wait for her to be ready, that's how much I love her. I went back to the dining....

"Before you say anything mum can I talk to dad Alone?" I asked

"Fine!" She said leaving the room and I was left with my dad

"Am listening!" He said

"Anele is not pregnant"♂

"Why" he asked😏how can he even ask me that.

"It's complicated, I love her and I don't want to ruin her future like that"

"You know that you can't be crowned Prince if you don't have a male child" he said

"I don't care about being crowned Prince"

"It's by tradition Kuda, the first born child gets to be crowned Prince" he said

"But I don't have a male child♂ maybe you should choose one of my brothers"

"Kuda you're the first born and you're going to give us a male child. You have Anele she's still young she can give you a lame child" he said

"What if she gives birth to a girl child?"

"Well they say third time is a charm" he said then mum entered with tea

"I hope you managed to talk some sense into your son" she said as she sat on the couch

"What if she's not ready" I asked

"Women are never ready son but it's your job to convince her" he said

👶♂️👶♂️👶♂️ Anele will never agree to all this, let alone she won't even let me touch her. I also missed an important meeting with an important client. I was in my room when Anele entered looking all sad I guess the meeting was a disaster as I imagined.

"Was it that bad" I asked as I walked up to her "Am sorry" she said in a soft voice

"It's ok! Don't worry about it"

"Am sorry that I got you the deal" she screamed

"You're kidding right?"

"Am a natural baby" she smiled and am not about to ruin her mood by telling her what my parents said.

"You're the best" I lifted her up and spun her around

"Oky you're making me dizzy" she giggled "Thank you!"

"I saw cars outside, do we have visitors" she asked

"Years my parents are here so go change"

"Do I have to see them♀ Am not feeling well" she sulked "Yes!"

"Can I just lock myself in my room like I do every time we have visitors" she asked

"They want to see you" "Fine!" She sighed

Dinner was awkward with my mother taking about babies♂ well Anele hardly said anything I guess she didn't know they were talking about her.

"So Anele! When are you and your husband giving us a grandchild" asked mother and Anele choked a little then looked at me.

"Mum let her finish eating first" I said

"Am not talking to you (then she turned to Anele) you ok dear" she asked because Anele was still coughing

"Am fine excuse me" said Anele rushing to the kitchen and followed her. I found her vomiting in the sink.

"Are you ok" I asked

"Yeah am fine" she answered before she threw up again

"Are you sure you're ok?"

"Am fine really don't worry about me" she said and I got close to her, she's burning up

"You should see a doctor"

"There's no need for that am fine" she answered

"Is everything ok" asked mum standing by the kitchen door

"I don't know Anele is vomiting"

"Don't tell me it's what I think it is" she smiled walking towards Anele, well I don't know what she's thinking.

"What" I asked and she walked up Anele. "Are you pregnant dear" she asked

"What! Am not pregnant" answered Anele before she vomited again.

"Pregnant?" I asked

"Yes! Maybe she's pregnant" smiled mother "Am not pregnant" said Anele

"One second" I said as I took Anele's hand and dragged her upstairs. She can't be pregnant I have never touched her, could it be that she's cheating. Many thoughts are running in my mind right now.

"Anele how could you" I asked as I locked the door

"How could I what? What are you talking about" she asked as if she doesn't know what am talking about.

"Are you pregnant?"

"You got to be kidding" she chuckled and it made me angrier

"Do I look like am joking?"

"Vomiting doesn't mean am pregnant Kuda" she said

"Then what?"

"I don't have to answer to you" she said walking towards the door and I pulled her back.

"Anele are you cheating"

"Don't ruin my day Kuda" she said "Answer

me Anele" I yelled.

"Bye!" She opened the door and I harshly pulled her back and she fell on the bed.

"You're not going anywhere" I stood In front of the door

"What is your problem, I told you that am not pregnant" she yelled

"Do not tell at me Anele, I asked you a question are you cheating"

"Even if I was I wouldn't tell you" she yelled "So you are?"

"Please let me be" she said

"Is that why you won't let me touch you? After everything that I have done for you"

"Am not pregnant" she said calmly "Then why are you vomiting?"

"Because am on my period you idiot, am vomiting because I have period" she yelled

"♂♂Anele! Am ..."

"Save it" she walked out the room.

*** Anele ***

How dare he? This is why I was distancing myself from him because I hate feeling like I owe someone, I get it I was poor before he came to my life, I get that I was a nobody but he doesn't have to remind me every day. I went to my room

and locked myself inside, my phone buzzed and it was my father

Me: Baba!

Him: I need some money Anele

Me: ♀but I sent you money a week ago

Him: Don't give me attitude Anele I spent lots and lots of money sending you to school, now that you famous and successful you can't even give me some of your money

Me: Fine! How much do you need? Him: \$200

Me: Where am i supposed to get all that money from?

Him: You are famous aren't you and you're married to a Prince.

Me: Look I don't have the money right now Him:

Well ask your husband

Me: Baba I don't have the money

Him: You're so ungrateful Anele, you can't even give me 200 dollars when I raised you with my money, took you to school. Is that how you thank me?

Me: Why are you making it seem like I owe you?

Him: Because you do, I put on my dreams on hold for you and this is how you thank me

Me: How's that my fault I didn't even ask to be born

Him: It's your fault (he hung up)

Why does it have to be like this♀ I don't need this kind of stress because am writing my exams in 4 days? The following 2 days I spent them in my room studying plus I don't feel like talking to anyone, the helpers would bring me food of course, I think am ready for my exams. The door opened and it was my mother why is she here?

"Hey mama!" I hugged "Mntanami!

(My child)"

"I missed you" I said, I know she sold me to an old man and kicked me out of her house but she's my mother and I love her.

"I missed you too mntanami" "What a

pleasant surprise" I said "You're in laws

called here"

"Kuda's parents called you here? Why" I asked

"We need to talk nana" she said as we sat on the bed.

"Am listening"

"Why aren't you pregnant yet" she asked

"And to think I thought you were here to see me" "But

Anele. ..."she said and I interrupted her

"But nothing mum isn't it enough that you made me marry him, now you want me to get pregnant. Am 16 mum"

"But you're married and you're his wife and you have to give him a child" she said

"But I don't want to"

"It's not upto you to decide" she said

"But it's my body and am not carrying no one's child and that's final" I said and she just shook her head in disbelief.

My mother tried talking to me but no! My decision is final am not having a baby, am not ready for that. Am still mad at Kuda for yelling at me and accusing me of cheating on him. I was having lunch all by myself with my bodyguard of course watching me from a distance, the guy hardly even says a word he just shakes his head or nods.

"Would you like anything else ma'am?"

"No thanks am good" I answered without even looking at the person

"Are you sure?"

"I said am fine" I said then I turned, it was Andile♀ "Hey Tanaka!"

"Since when do you call me Tanaka" I asked

"Anyway I wanted to say thank you for the other night. I heard you're the one who took me home"

"You heard but you don't remember" I said

"I don't remember a lot of things from that night"

"Like the fact that you owe me 34 dollars" I asked

"♂Sorry!" He said as he took out his wallet and handed me 50 dollars

"Thank you!" I chuckled as I took the money "Do I really owe you?"

"No! I just wanted you to pay for my lunch" I laughed

"You know you don't have to pay here since your husband owns the place"

"No way!" I gasped

"This is one of our restaurants"

"Wow! I didn't know, which also explains why you're here" I replied

"You look great by the way!"

"You always say that" I smiled "Because
you always look great" "Thanks Andile" I
said

"You're welcome Anele" he smiled "I should
get going"

"Let me walk you to your car" he said

"No am good plus am here with Peter (bodyguard)"

"Am just walking you to the car, it's no big deal" he insisted

"Ok then"

"So how are things with your husband" he asked "We
good" I fake smiled

"Oh I almost forgot, I have movie tickets for tomorrow night
and Kuda has movies, do you want to come" he asked

"You'd have to check with Kuda first"

"Ok! So if he agrees then you game" he asked "Yeah
am cool with anything"

"Ok then Miss Moyo" he said opening the car door for me he
didn't say Mrs Diale

[05/02, 12:19] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 18

After lunch the driver then drove me back to school to write my afternoon paper, we writing Literature which is my favourite by the way. I also got the chance to meet my former classmates and friends which was heart-breaking because they actually have plans for the future unlike me who's playing number 4 or should I say number 3 now. After the exam Rutendo, Anita and I went and chilled out over smoothies....

"The Prince must be treating you well because you're glowing" said Anita

"That man is stressing me" I replied

"So how is it like? You know, being married" she asked

"Hectic when you're married to an insecure man and part of polygamy" I sighed

"But he's not abusing you right" asked Rutendo

"Do I look like the kind that can be abused and keep quiet♀"

"Knowing you he wouldn't dare" laughed Anita

"How is he like" Rutendo asked

"Who? Kuda! Well he's a great person and a great father"

"I mean how is he like towards you" said Rutendo

"He's great, he doesn't shout anymore he hasn't pressured me into doing anything I don't want to"

"Would you say you like him" asked Anita "I don't know"

"That's a yes" she said "I didn't say that!"

"Come on Anele we know you. If you don't like him you'd say it" Rutendo said

"Maybe I do but I never thought my first boyfriend would be a 31 year old"

"You mean a rich and handsome 31 year old" Anita giggled

"His money has nothing to do with all this"

"Well from the looks of it he spoils you rotten I mean girl look at yourself, it's like you came out of the TV" said Rutendo

"Well she kind of did 😊 she is a model after all and we friends with a celebrity aka the Prince's wife" said Anita

"First of all am not a celebrity"

"Then why do you have guards with you" Anita asked

"Because I have an insecure husbandduh"

"He loves you Anele! Is that a crime" Rutendo asked

"Speak of the devil" I said as my phone flashed and I put him on speaker.

Me: Mr Diale

Him: Your exam ended 2 hours ago

Me: Am fine and the exam went well thanks for asking

Him: Where are you?

Me: Am with my friends Him: Male or

Female Me: Male!

Him: Don't start with me Mrs Diale Me: You

called because?

Him: I wanted to check on you

Me: You mean to check if am not with another man? Him:

Yes that too because if you're I will kill both of you Me:

Are you done?

Him: I will be booking a hotel for you because you can't travel 4 hours every day, to and from school

Me: Ok!

Him: And please behave because your guards will be watching

Me: Yes your highness

Him: Bye Mrs Me! Love you!

I then hung up.

"Awwww isn't that sweet" said Anita

"I think you and I have different definitions of sweet" "Come on Anele isn't it obvious that he loves you" said Anita "He's just marking his territory" I said

"Isn't that sweet" said Rutendo

"Okay I'll get going I still need to study for tomorrow's paper"

"You going to the hotel" asked Rutendo

"Well you heard the man, he said he's checking me in a hotel"

"I wish my boyfriend would spoil me like that" said Anita

"Try finding a blesser because your boyfriend can't even afford lunch" Rutendo teased

"Whatever" Anita rolled her eyes "Bye girls!" I

hugged them goodbye

We (the driver and I) went to the hotel and it was quiet since am used to all the drama. I took a shower then studied a little before I got a call from Andile who kind of calls a lot these days♀

Him: Hey cutie Me: Andile hie!

Him: How are you?

Me: Am great and I know you calling about the movie....

Him: Nahh! Am just checking on you Me: Oh

oky

Him: Have you ate? Me: Yes

Him: Good now get some rest Me: Yes

sir😊

Him: Sleep well!

Honestly I don't know why he calls to 'check on me' it's too much that I have people watching me 24/7. 3 weeks went by and finally I was done with my exams although I was still at the hotel, with my father asking for money he keeps wanting

more and more♀well I haven't seen my mother even if we're in the same city. I was sitting on the bed playing with my phone since I finished packing, am back today.

Andile called God what does he want from me...

Me: Hey

Him: Since you're done with your exams do you wanna go celebrate

Me: Well am going to have to check with my husband first.

Him: Your husband huh

Me: What?

Him: Nothing! I miss you Me: Okay!

Him: It's quiet here without you, we miss our favourite model

Me: You and who?

Him: Me and my camera

Me: Since when are you a photographer Him:

Since you because a model

The door opened and it was Kuda, I then hung up...

"So you don't call if I don't but you have time to talk to Andile" he asked

"In my defence he called me"

"It's been 3 weeks and you couldn't even call your husband" he asked

"Hey Kuda! How are you" I said as I sat up.

"Don't change the subject, you couldn't even bother to call and tell me you're ok".

"I didn't think that was necessary since you have people watching my every move.

"That's for your safety"

"I know you missed fighting with me, well I missed you too" I went and hugged him

"This is the first time you voluntarily hugged me"

"Do you really want to start fighting with me right now" I asked

"We both know I never win" he held me tighter, I might as well admit that I missed him.

"Are you here to get me?"

"Nah am here to see you" he replied "See me?"

Why?"

"Do I have to have a reason to see my wife♂?" "So am not going back home?"

"We are but I have something to tell you first" he sighed as we sat on the bed

"What is it?"

"I love you Anele always know that" he said as he held my hands

"Okay you're scaring me!"

"I need a huge favour from you "he said "What is it?"

"I need you to carry my child for me" he asked "A child👶👶"

"My parents want a grandchild and who knows what crazy thing they'll do if we don't give them one" he said

"A child? I don't think am ready to be a mother"

"That's why am begging you Anele! I want you and I can't you to carry my child"

"But am not ready"

"That's why am asking for this one favour" he pleaded.

"Am not ready!" I said and he sighed. I know I sound selfish since he has been patient with me but am not ready. He went got me water.

"Here you go!"

"Thanks" I said getting the glass and I gulped it all down.

"Please don't hate me"

"For what" I asked as he pulled me to his arms. "Am sorry ok but I have to do this" he said "Have to do what?"

"I love you ok" she said as he kissed my forehead then he unbuttoned my shirt. I wanted to stop him but I couldn't, I was too weak to do so. Did he drug me?

[05/02, 23:42] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 19

*** Kudakwashe ***

Am just watching her, she's sleeping so peaceful and she looks so cute. I know it was wrong of me to drug her so I can sleep with her but knowing Anele she wouldn't have agreed so I had to do what I had to do because it was either that or I get ready for a new wife which I don't want because I actually love this kid and I don't want another wife I want her. I wish she could see how much I really love her. I know I said I was going to wait for her to be ready but my parents were also putting pressure on me and I was running or of excuses to tell them. I know the moment she's going to wake up she's going to flip but what's done is done. I didn't give her anything harmful I actually got this pill from a doctor friend and it was a hormone pill it actually got her in the mood and made her a little tipsy and weak. Honestly I feel bad for doing that but I want her to carry my child.

I got out of bed kissed her on the forehead then ordered something to eat before I went and took a long shower thinking about what went down an hour ago, this is not how I pictured it 🤔♂she's going to hate me, just when she was warming up to me I went and ruined, she won't even remember her first time♂♂I really feel bad. I got out of the shower and put on my sweat pants and a vest, looked at her one more time before opening the door for room services. I went and knelt near the bed, ran my hands through her hair, down her jaw line this might be the last time I get to touch her soft skin. I stole a kiss before waking her up.

"Anele!" I brushed her cheeks with my finger

"Mmmm!"

"Wake up!" I whispered

"Am tired! I just want to sleep" she covered her head

"No! You have to wake up, you've been sleeping for 16 hours"

"16 hours!" She said "Yeah wake up"

"Okay!" She said trying to sit up then she hissed a little

"How are you feeling?"

"You didn't" her eyes popped out then checked herself" No!
No!"

"Baby look!"

"Don't baby me! How could you? Kuda I trusted you" she
cried

"Am sorry!"

"I thought you said you love me! Why did you do it" she
asked with tears running down her cheeks then she started
throwing like punches at me and I held her hands.

"Am sorry Anele!"

"You drugged me didn't you? You could have asked me first" she yelled

"Come on Anele it's not like you'd have agreed"

"Still that doesn't give you the right to drug me, Kuda that was my first time. And to top it all I didn't even agree to all of this, this is the same as raping me" she cried

"Anele you haven't made things easy for me you won't let me even near you. Anele I love you and I know what I did is wrong but what choice did I have?"

"Get out" she yelled "Baby!"

"Get out" she said wiping the tears off her cheeks

"Am not going anywhere because I love you and I know you hate me right now but I won't let you go through this alone" I said getting close to her

"Get away from me" she yelled and started throwing punches at me then it was pillows, the vase near the bed fell and there was glass everywhere.

"You're just like my father" she yelled throwing my phone at me and it hit the wall

"Anele calm down!" I said and she got off the bed forgetting there's glass and she stepped on it and screamed. I rushed to her and helped her sit on the bed, tried to pull the glass out but she'd scream in pain I guess it's deeper than I thought. I took the landline and called the ambulance, there was blood

on them sheets, the floor. Anele wouldn't stop crying, I took of my shirt and wrapped it on her foot then held her tight telling her everything is going to be fine. The ambulance came and took her, I had to get with her because she wouldn't stop crying I can imagine what she'll do in labour 🙄. The doctor got the glass out and they stitched her up and she was good to go. She was using a crutch of course. I went to the room where she was....

"Are you ok" I asked and she hit me with her crutch guys
Anele abuses me 😏

"Do I look ok to you?"

"Sorry my love, I mean how you are feeling" I asked "I

feel like a 31 year old man slept with me"

"Okay let's get you to the car before you get me arrested" I said trying to help her up

"Do not touch me! I can walk on my own"

"Will stop being stubborn for a second and let me help" I said and she swunged her crutch at me I guess that her new weapon.

"Get away from me!" She said limping out of the room. We drove back to the hotel well am not about to start explaining why she's using a crutch. We got to the hotel and the room was now clean, I ordered food while she took a shower, she came back wearing a black dress then she sat on the couch and started eating, I joined her...

"Anele!"

"Can I please eat in peace Kudakwashe? Please" she said

"Yes ma'am" I smiled and she was very annoyed, her phone buzzed and she answered it then handed it to me it was Andile...

Me: Andile my man!

Him: Why isn't your phone reachable?

Me: Well my wife here threw it at the wall and its dead now

Him: What did you do that made her throw your phone at the wall?

Me: It's complicated but we cool now

Him: Treat her right man or you'll lose her to another

Me: Am trying eyy but she's not making it easy for me

Him: Anyway I called to say I went to check on your wives like you requested and as usual they are fighting

Me:♂♂♂ just let them kill each other

Him: 😏😏 come on is Anele messing your head to that extent that you don't care about your other wives

Me: This kid will be the death of me plus she's mad at me

Him: What did you do?

Me: Well talk when I come back from the looks she's giving me, she wants her phone back

Him: Ok bye!

I then gave Anele her phone back. She took her phone and went to bed. I went to bed to join her.

"Don't even think about it" she said as I was about to get in bed

"You're kidding right?"

"You're sleeping on the couch Mr" she said "Am not sleeping on the couch".

"Fine!" she got out of bed took one pillow and the bed cover then limbed to the couch.

"Wait! I'll sleep on the couch" I said but she just tucked herself on the couch.

Three days went by and she was still giving me the silent treatment. I have tried everything but she won't forgive me.

*** Anele ***

A week went by and hoped I wasn't pregnant because I will die if I found out that am pregnant. Do you know that thing that happens when you think that you pregnant where you even see the signs and symptoms well that's me right now I even prayed that I'd never get with a man if I don't get pregnant, my foot had healed but I was still limping a little bit at least I was no longer using the crutch. Today Kuda and I are going to this party well one of his friends is having a party and as usual I didn't want to go but the almighty doesn't take no for an answer so I had to suck it up. I put on my peach knee length dress and Kuda put on his suit that matched with my dress, we went to the so called party honestly I don't even want to be there. One of the waiters walked up to us and offered us champagne.

"No no! You're not old enough to drink that" said Kuda

"Am starting to think you're the devil" I folded my arms "I can't have you getting drunk ok"

"Fine then at least get me some water" I said "It's by the table!"

"Aren't you even going to get it for me" I asked

"Anele don't start please not in front of people" "So much for a gentleman" I said walking away

Kuda was busy with his friends and I was left alone since I only know one person at the party and that's Andile. This is why I hate going out with Kuda because I end up alone drinking water since am too young for champagne mxm I went to the ladies to powder my face while I was busy powdering my face I heard the door open then close then there was that clicking sound meaning the door is locked. I just ignored it well it the ladies bathroom after all. For some reason I looked over and saw Andile standing there♀

"Andile! What are you doing in the ladies bathroom" I asked

"You look great!" he said walking towards me and I was moving backwards until my back reached the wall

"Thanks but why are you here?"

"Relax! I mean no harm" he whispered as he sniffed me

"You're making me uncomfortable"

"Just relax" he whispered

"How can I relax when this sniffing me and why are you here?"

"God you smell great" he exhaled heavily

"I think I should get going" I said using my hand to create a gap between us because he was really close.

"I like you Anele in fact I love you" "Are you high" I asked

"I didn't drink anything I really love you, I loved you from the moment I laid my eyes on you"

"Am married" I said

"Just say you love me too and I'll handle the rest" "But I don't love you" I answered

"Please don't say that. You're breaking my heart" he pressed me against the wall holding my hands above my head

"Let go of me!"

"My feelings for you are too strong" he said then he smashed his lips on mine, how is he so strong, he's holding both my hands with one hand but I can't even break loose. I bit his lip and he let go that's when I got the chance to rush out. What just happened? How do I tell Kuda that his friend made a move on me, they have been friends for a long time and I don't want to come between them?

What do I do? 🤔

[06/02, 19:54] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 20

I rushed out of the bathroom and walked straight to Kuda, I was literally shaking and why am I shaking I don't even like Andile. Kuda was busy talking to his friends and he didn't even notice I was next to him. I slightly tapped his arm and he turned to face me

"Hey! Is everything ok" he asked "I want to

go home" I whispered

"But we've only been here less than an hour"

"I know but I don't feel well I want to go" I said I just want to get out of here. I don't think I can face Andile after what went down.

"You smashed your lip stick" he said using his thumb to wipe on the bottom of my lip.

"Thanks!"

"Please stay a little longer I promise within an hour we'll be out of here" he said

"Am tired my feet are killing me" I lied "I can drive her" said Andile

"No!" I answered

"Why? I thought you said you are not feeling well" asked Kuda

"Let's go!" Andile lightly pulled me. "Take care of my wife" Kuda called out. "Oh I will" Andile smiled at me

"Let go of me" I said

"Get in" he said as he opened the car door "Am not going anywhere with you"

"Will you get it Anele" he yelled and it was drawing people's attention so I had to get in.

"What do you want from me?" He just kept a straight face and kept driving

"You should have reported him you know" "I should report you for harassing me" I said

"I kissed you that doesn't count as harassment"

"You're just like your friend you don't respect women" I folded my arms

"So did you check if you're pregnant?"

"Don't talk to me and just drive" I clucked "You look cute when angry"

"Do you know Kuda would kill you if he found out that you have feelings for me" I asked

"Well he doesn't have to find out" "Excuse me!" I said

"Look Anele I didn't chose to love you after all the heart wants what it wants"

"Did you just pass the hotel" I asked "Yes we going to get something to eat"

"But am not hungry plus I can eat at the hotel" I replied

"Well that means you'll be watching me eat"

"I just don't get you" I said "Soon you will" he smiled

He drove to this pizza place well I might as well eat since I haven't had dinner. Andile is acting like nothing happened and to top it all he's not even denying that he has feelings for me. After that he drove me to the hotel and Kuda wasn't yet back so I went straight to bed.

After two days we went back home we found Chido sitting on the couch laughing with her phone.

"Anele!" She rushed to hug me

"Hey! I missed you" I hugged her back

"You know he's also our husband right? We also need him" she chuckled

"That's why I brought him back, am tired of seeing his face" I said and Kuda just looked at me and shook his head

"Well am glad you both are back" said Chido

"Well I missed my bed at the hotel Kuda kept stealing the blanket" I said heading upstairs and I ran into Melissa who just rolled her eyes at me.

"Hie to you too" she said

"Hie Melissa! How have you been?"

"Lonely since you want our husband all to yourself" she said

"Well he's back now♀"

"And am supposed to be happy you're the reason he doesn't have time for us anymore" she shouted

"Am sorry but it's not my fault that he comes to me"

"It is your fault maybe if you didn't wear all those tiny clothes seducing him he'd have time for us" she yelled

"Cut it out both of you" said Kuda

"No Kuda this has to stop am tired of you treating us like we don't exist" she yelled

"What is wrong with you Melissa first you were fighting with Chido now it's Anele" Kuda asked

"Well it seems that's the only way to get your attention"

"You should have just talked to me" said Kuda

"Like you have the time"

"Ok everybody let's sit and talk" said Kuda we all walked up to him and sat on the couch. He looked at me before talking....

"I know I haven't been spending time with you and am sorry but I needed time to think" he said

"Think about what" Chido asked

"About us! All of us" he sighed honestly I don't understand what he's talking about

"Ok we're listening" said Melissa

"First of all I want you all to know that I love you" he said then roughly scratched his head, this doesn't sound good at all I sense bad news coming. I don't understand why he kept looking at me the whole time.

"Just tell us already" said Chido

"Am in love with Anele" he said "What 😬"

"Really? That's why you made us sit here" Melissa rolled her eyes

"Am telling you all this because it's getting hard for me to play husband to you all when my heart is with Anele" he said

"Does this mean you don't want to be with us anymore" Chido asked

"Am saying I love you but am in love with Anele" he said

"That doesn't even make sense" I whispered and why does he even love me♀ I haven't even given him any reason to.

"Well I'll make things easy I'll leave" said Chido "Chido I didn't say I wanted you to go" said Kuda

"I know but I won't stay where am not loved and appreciated. I get it you love Anele and telling us that shows that you really love her and I'll give you space" she answered leaving the room and I followed her to her room

"Chido! Am sorry but please don't leave" I begged

"Look Anele I have nothing against you and I understand why Kuda loves you. You're pretty, you're strong and your brains is just a bonus. I wish you all the best" she said

"Am sorry!" I said

"Don't be! I know Kuda and I can tell he really loves you, now it's upto you whether you chose to open up your heart to him" she said

"You don't hate me?"

"How can I hate a cute thing like you" she squeezed my cheeks well I don't understand how she's cool about all this

"Why don't you ever get mad" I asked

"I do get mad but unlike you I think before I act" she chuckled

"Please don't go!"

"I have to Anele! Can't you see this God giving me another chance? Now I have the opportunity to go back to school, finish my diploma and who knows I might even get married again" she laughed with tears running down her face, I know deep down she's hurting

"Am going to miss you" I hugged her "Stop!

You're making me cry more" "Promise me we'll

keep in touch" I asked

"Yes and spend his money 😊 he likes it when we do that"

"I don't know how you do it but I wish I was you" I hugged her once more

"Are you going to keep on crying or are you going to help me pack" said Chido

This is wife number 2 leaving because of me♀ I bet Melissa now hates me more than she already did. Am just going to avoid running into her because I know she'll murder me and I don't even understand why Kuda loves me. I helped Chido pack even though I don't understand why she has to leave right away. I waved her goodbye then got into the house and found Melissa sitting on the couch.

"I don't know what you did to my husband but whatever it is it's going to fade soon" she said

"Look I know you don't like me but I didn't ask him to love me" I answered

"You probably did something to him because Kuda would never fall for a kid"

"Really Melissa? You think I'd stoop that low" I asked

"Just 4 months ago he hated your gut, he wanted nothing to do with you then out of the blue he loves you with his whole"

"Let me leave before I say something I might regret" I said walking away and she pulled me back.

"Am not done talking!"

"Let go of my hand" I said trying to break loose

"Melissa let go of her" Kuda commanded and she let go and looked at Kuda before she went to her room.

"Why did you do that? Now she hates me more than she did" I asked

"Because I love you!"

"Why? Why do you love me" I asked

"MaMoyo Madhewa mavula malanda, mageza ngochago..."

"Stop!" I tried to keep a straight face but couldn't, I giggled I can't believe he knows my clan names, he held my hands and looked at me directly in the eyes.

"I love you because I love you! I don't have a reason why I love you but you're everything I need in woman, you're strong, beautiful, and stubborn of course and you're intelligent. You're everything I want in a woman and I know am older than you but this old madala loves you Anele Moyo!"

"Old Madala" I laughed "Are you

answered now?" "I guess♀" I answered

"You're beautiful!"

"Thanks but I still feel bad about Chido leaving because of me!" I said

"Chido didn't leave because of you, she told me a week ago that she's wants to leave"

"She did" I asked

"Yes! Anymore questions?" "None!" I

answered

"Permission to hug you since you don't like being touched"
he asked

"Just this once" I giggled as he wrapped his muscular arms around me, I was on my toes because he's tall and am tiny. I closed my eyes and inhaled his cologne wow am really someone's wife now.

"Are you hungry" he asked "Yes!"

"Let's go make you something to eat" he said and the door opened and it was him mother and she had her don't mess with me face. Before I could greet her she interrupted me.

"Anele come with me" she said in a firm voice then headed upstairs and I looked at Kuda he just shrug his shoulders.

"Now!" She yelled and I hurried and followed her.

♀♀♀♀♀♀♀♀

[08/02, 11:06] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 21

*** Anele ***

I followed mother in-law upstairs and she headed to m my room, I got in and closed the door. She was sitting on the bed keeping a straight face as usual.

"Afternoon Ma!" I said in a soft voice.

"Muroora (Daughter in-law)" she said keeping a straight face, does this woman ever smile.

"How are you Ma?"

"Well we'll find out in a few minutes" she said and she dug into her bag and pulled out a small plastic then handed it to me.

"What's this" I asked

"Go in there and you'll find out" she said pointing at the bathroom using her eyes and I did as told. I went into the bathroom, said on the toilet while opening the plastic and there were 4 pregnancy test. Since I have never used one I read the manual and followed the instructions. I said a short prayer and crossed my fingers I just hope they come out negative. The manual said 5 minutes and after 5 I checked, I jumped up and down because it was negative. I then put on a

sad face and walked out well since mother in law wants me pregnant might as well play along.

"Am sorry!" I said as I showed her the tests and she was disappointed.

"Anele why aren't you pregnant" she asked honestly I don't even know how to answer that well for starters am 16 and i don't want to be a mother yet. Well I didn't answer I just kept quiet. She called Kuda and he came in right away it's like he was standing by the door.

"Why isn't Anele pregnant" she asked in a firm voice

"It's complicated" he swallowed hard

"Anele I want a grandchild" she said

"Ok" I answered and Kuda gave me the look.

"Kudakwashe I said I want I grandchild you hear me" she said

"Yes mother I hear you" he said annoyed

"Good" she said leaving the room and she locked the door from outside.

"You're not getting out of there until Anele is pregnant" she called out.

"You got to be kidding me!" I said to Kuda

"You heard the lady let's get on with it" Kuda laughed

"Over my dead body"

"Didn't you just agree" he asked

"I agreed because am scared of your mother"

"Come here" he said

"No!"

"We going to talk! Come here" he said sitting on the bed and I slowly walked to him well I don't trust him.

"Am listening!"

"I don't want you to get pregnant! Yet!" He said "But your mother said..."

"My mother is just being her crazy self don't mind her" he said and I chuckled.

"I love you Anele and I don't want to rush you plus you could get me arrested" he laughed

"You didn't think about that before you drugged me"

"Am sorry about that I wasn't thinking straight I had a lot of pressure coming from my parents" he said

"What will happen if you don't give them a male grandchild?"

"I don't know but if I give them one I get to be the crowned Prince" he answered

"I want you to be crowned Prince and I want to give you a child but am not ready"

"I know and am not asking you to" he said "What about your family?"

"My family don't matter, I saw how mad you were that day at the hotel and I don't ever want to see you like that" he said

"Now I feel bad because it's all upto me now. Its upto me if I choose to carry your child"

"Let's let you turn 18 first then we'll start talking about kids ok because you're a kid as it is" he chuckled

"Thanks for understanding but again what are you going to tell your mother?"

"Let me handle my mother you just focus on your career, do you really want to be a model your whole life" he asked

"I want to be a Physiotherapist"

"You focus on that and let me handle my parents ok" he said, this is another side of him I've never seen.

"Thank you!"

"Yeah you turning me into a weakling" he shook his head

"😊I think it's sweet"

"So! Tell me about yourself Anele Tanaka Moyo" he held my hands making me face him.

"Am Anele just an ordinary girl from Chitungwiza?"

"Why are you so afraid of falling in love" he asked

"Well am afraid of falling in love because I don't know what love is, I don't know what it feels like. I grew up around violence and pain. My mother used to get abused by my

father and she'd stay with him because she loved him I told myself I'd avoid falling in love that way I don't end up like my mother being a victim of abuse"

"Am sorry but not all men are like your father do you know that" he said

"All men are the same"

"No Anele don't colour us all bad" he said

"Then why did you drug me so you can sleep with me"

"Am sorry" he looked down

"It's ok it's not like am going anywhere after all my mother doesn't even want me I guess am stuck with you"

"Do you want to be here" he asked

"Do I want to be married to a 31 year old no? But do I have the slightest feeling for you, yes!" I said and a smile peaked from his face

"You don't know how much that means to me"

"Don't get excited I might leave you for someone younger" I laughed

"You wouldn't dare!" "Am hungry" I

said

"Let's call mother to come open the door. Where's the spare key" he asked

"Why didn't I think about that♀?"

"Because you we're thinking about babies" he said as I handed him the key.

*** Andile ***

Love sure does make some do the craziest things, here am I day dreaming about my friend's wife. I don't know why I love that kid so much. I have noticed she has been avoiding me since I confessed my feelings for her but the more she avoids me the more I want her. We have a Fashion launch today and with Anele as our top model I guess we'll be seeing her a lot today. I checked my wrist watch and it was 8:15pm as usual Anele and her husband are late, a car pulled up well I was waiting for them outside. The door opened and Anele stepped out and she looked like a Goddess, she was wearing a gold staples long dresses that showed her curves with her hair tied up and a touch of makeup. She got out and closed the door.

"Where's your husband" I asked "He's not feeling well"

"I guess it's just me and you" I placed my hand on her waist leading her in.

"Again with touching me!"

"Behave the Media is here and you look stunning by the way"
I whispered in her in ear

"I swear if you keep bothering me am telling Kuda"

"Tell him! I dare you" I smiled well I know she's just blabbing.

"So you'd risk 15 years friendship for somebody who doesn't even like you?!"

"You're worth the risk sweetheart" I said "Ok let
go of me so I can go get ready"

"You're not going out today you're my date" I answered

"Says who?"

"Says me am your boss remember" I said "You're
not my boss"

"I signed you up and as your boss am making you my date" I
said

"Why are you doing this to me?" "Let's see
because I love you" I said

"Am married to your friend for Christ's sake!"

"Legally you're not his wife plus you deserve a man that'll
love you and treat you like a Goddess that you are" I winked
at her and she tried to walk away but I pulled her back, Anele
seems to be the 'playing hard to get type' I know a part of her
wants me.

"If you don't let go of my hand I swear and screaming"

"Feel free!" I said and she shook her head in disbelief

"What do you want from me?"

"Just give me a chance to prove myself to you" I replied

"My loyalty lies with Kuda"

"Please! What do you know about loyalty" I chuckled

"Well unlike you at least I respect him enough not to get with his best friend"

"Are you sure about that" I asked "What do you mean?"

"Let's see what your husband thinks about this" I said and I pulled her towards me and kissed her.

"What the hell Andile!" She pushed me off her

"You taste like cherries" I locked my bottom lip while she rushed to the bathroom. 🤰♂🤰♂ Am so in trouble but it's worth it.

I have always loved Anele ever since she opened that door for me I fell in love with her. I looked across the room and I saw Maria with her bump and she was with Jerald, she's pregnant and don't tell me she's carrying Jerald's child because Kuda will flip well he might get a heart attack if he finds out Anele and I kissed. And to make things worse we made the front page the following morning.

One of the Prince's wives cheating on her husband with his best friend and it was picture of me hugging Anele well at least it wasn't the one kissing her. But I loved the comments thought

They look good together

We don't blame Andile she's gorgeous

Yes some of them were negative but what the hell the media says whatever they like.

[10/02, 00:08] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 22

*** Kudakwashe ***

I wasn't at the Fashion launch not because I was sick but my parents wanted to talk to me so I had to fly to South Africa, I tried to bail out but my parents wouldn't let me so had to let Anele go by herself even though I had my doubts, well I don't trust other man around her worse she looked gorgeous in that gold dress. Anyway I flew to S.A with my mother nagging me the whole way 🙌🙌🙌 this woman sometimes forgets that am 31 and a father of two she can't keep treating me like a kid.

I haven't been home in a long time, the last time I was here was when Chido and I had our traditional wedding. And it was great to be there after a long time. I sitting in the dining room going through Anele's pictures in my phone smiling by myself when my brother came and sat next to me....

"This girl is really turning you into something eyy, look at you smiling by yourself like a teenager" said Raymond

"She's one in a million I tell you" I said handing him my phone as he kept scrolling through.

"As much as it kills me to say this she's gorgeous and for the first time mother choose well"

"Yeah she's a beauty and she's young like underage young" I sighed

"And let me guess they pressuring you into giving them a heir?"

"Can you imagine♂ I really love this kid and I don't want to ruin her future by getting her pregnant" I said

"It's by tradition that the first boy child gets crowned Prince once he gets a heir"

"I don't care about the throne, why don't they crown you? You have a male child" I asked

"Well it doesn't work like that, you are the first born and it's by tradition"

"Screw tradition I just wish I was born in a normal family without thrones and hundred wives" I sighed

"You don't mean that!"

"Now that I have found the woman I actually love mother is on her case about getting kids not forgetting she's a kid herself. She should at least let her turn 18 first" I said

"I love her don't you?"

"More than words can explain" I answered

"I really need to see this girl who's turning you into a sissy😁"

"Maybe you should go back home with me, you can bring your wife" I suggested

"Yeah we need to get away from this place mother is abusing my wife ayy she has her working like a slave"

"And am sure she might get along with Anele even though they don't see eye to eye with Melissa" I sighed

"Melissa just needs someone to straighten her wig" "Hey don't talk about my wife like that. Melissa is a great person I just don't understand her sudden bitterness" I said

"She's bitter because she feels threatened by this new bee have you taken your time to look at this kid even my wife can feel threatened if she sees me with her"

"I'll talk to her I can't have my wives hating each other" I said

Then we started talking about the old days, way long before wives and kids. It was great spending time with my little brother and our parents had to ruin the mood as usual keeping straight faces sometimes I ask myself how these two ended together.

"Kuda what is this nonsense am hearing from your mother" Philip (my father) asked and I looked at my brother who mouthed 'mama's boy'

"Is it about Anele not being pregnant please don't tell me that's the reason we flew here" I asked

"If I knew better I'd say that kid bewitched you" Grace (mother) chuckled shaking her head.

"I think she did" Whispered Ray

"Do we look like we're joking to you" said father, well smiling wouldn't kill them

"Sorry!" I looked down trying to hold in a laugh because Ray was imitating mother.

"Why isn't your wife pregnant Kuda? Do you want us to bring another wife for you because we will" said Philip

"I don't want another wife Dad am good with Anele" I answered

"You mean the same Anele that you can't get pregnant" Grace asked

"It's not like I can't get her pregnant it's because I don't want to"

"Bathong! Are you listening to your son Philip? He we are stressing and he's not even trying" said Grace

"She's young mother and I don't want to rush her"

"She knew what she was getting herself into when she agreed to marry you" said Philip

"You forced the poor child to marry me"

"Hey Kuda we don't care about that what matters is that she's your wife and we want a heir"

"Am not a child anymore am a grown man and you two need to start treating me like one"

"Lord have mercy that child is turning my son against me" Grace held her head

"More like whipped" Raymond whispered

"Kudakwashe Diale if you still want to be my son then give me son or I'll be forced to take action" said Philip as he stood up and left the room. Simone (little sister) rushed in carrying her iPad....

"Have you seen this" she said handing it to me and I saw the article about Anele and Andile 🤔🤔

"Is this even true" Raymond asked

"Well there's only one way to find out, get your stuff really we going back to Zimbabwe" I said

Am trying by all means to keep it cool and questioning myself, is it true or it's just the Media being the Media. But Andile would never do something like this we've been friends our whole lives he wouldn't. But on the other hand I don't trust any man around Anele. Raymond his wife Nicholine and I then flew back to Zimbabwe.

*** Anele ***

Am pacing up and down the room with the article in my hand and am with Melissa who seems to be enjoying all this. Why would Andile pull a stunt like this? Kuda is going to kill me! Am sure he's seen it by now.

"Will you sit down? You're making me dizzy" said Melissa

"Am dead! He's going to kill me" I held my head

"If I was you I was going to start packing" "Shut

up Melissa" I said

"Shut up Melissa" she said imitating me "I knew something was up Anele you were spending too much time with Andile.

"But I didn't do anything"

"Imagine if you go I'll be the only Mrs Diale" she smiled. I can't believe am stressing about all this, just months ago I would have gladly walked out. My phone rang and it was the fifth reporter calling to ask if the rumours are true mxm

"Anele the model" Melissa laughed

"I swear Melissa say one more word and I will lose it" I yelled and Melissa stood up and left the room. After clucking at me of course.

My phone rang and it was an unknown number and I swear if it's the Media am going to lose it.

Me: Anele!

Voice: Hey beautiful! (♀ It's Andile. This guy has the nerve) Me:

What do you want from me Andile?

Him: I want you! And I think you should call me Honey

Me: You're crazy.

Him: Crazy about you

Me: Why are you calling me? Isn't the stunt you pulled enough?

Him: I wanted to check if he laid a hand on you because I will kill him if he does

Me: Don't ever call me, do you hear me?

Him: Sorry but I can't do that and call me if that husband of yours lays a hand on you.

Me: Bye!

Him Love y...

I hung up before he could finish. The door opened and I almost shat myself when Kuda, some man and woman I have never met walked in

"Hey! You must be Anele" said the man as he hugged me, he looks like a nice person and he also looks like Kuda, I guess it's one of his brothers.

"Hello!" I said as I hugged the woman

"Hie Anele am Raymond and am your new husband and this is Nicholine your Amainini and the love of my life"

"Nice to meet you Nicholine (then I turned to Kuda who was leaning on the wall with his hands in his pockets) Hello!" I said

"Raymond I'll send someone to show you your rooms, I need to talk to my wife" he said

"Take it easy on her bro" said Raymond as I followed Kuda, he went to my room and stood by the door opened wide for me to enter. I sat on the bed well I know he's about to start shouting. He came and knelt in front of me, lifted my chin and made me look at him.

"Is it true" he asked, I swallowed hard and looked down but he lifted it up again.

"Is it true Anele are you cheating on me with my friend" he asked in a firm voice

"No!" I sighed I mean yes he kissed me but am not cheated

"Are you sure? Because I will mess you up if I found out you're lying to me" he said and it took me back to my

parents. My father would beat my mother up over things like this. I looked at him with tears threatening to come out.

"Am not cheating on you" I said and a tear escaped my eye.

"What's wrong" he whispered

"You're not going to hit me aren't you?"

"What? No! I'd never" he answered using his thumb to wipe the tears off

"Good because I will leave you if you do"

"I know" he chuckled then my phone vibrated in my back pocket and he snatched it from my hands before I could see the message. The smile on his face faded and suddenly his eyes were filled with anger, he threw my phone at the wall and it cracked.

"The hell Kuda! Why..." Before I could even finish I was on the floor

He promised♀

[10/02, 21:29] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 23

"How could you? Anele with my friend of all the people you choose my friend" Kuda yelled well I was still on the floor and this can only mean one thing, he knows Kuda kissed me.

"It's not what you think" I said, he kicked me on the stomach I groaned holding my stomach.

"Am going to kill him then am going to kill you then I'll kill myself" he yelled then walked out slamming the door behind him. I held my stomach and flinched in pain as I stood up and I sat on the bed silently crying. I don't want to be like my mother, suffering abuse in silent no I will not let this happen. I picked my cracked phone from the floor at least it wasn't dead, on the screen was a picture of me and Andile kissing at the party and from the angle of the camera it's like we were really kissing. A call me through and it was my mother.

Me: Ma! (I said in a cracking voice)

Her: Mntanami! (My child) how are you Me: Am

not ok mum (I sniffed)

Her: What's wrong Anele?

Me: He hit me mum 🤔 that idiot you sold me to hit me. Her:

Why? What happened?

Me: Please come get me

Her: You know I can't just come and get you Anele Me:

So you want to come when am dead.

Her: Kuzalunga mntanami (everything will be fine)

Me: When mum? I want out mum this is the second time he laid his hands on and it's the last am leaving him.

Her: You're just angry Anele why don't you rest then we'll talk when you come this side.

Me: Okay

I cried myself to sleep. The following day I was woken up by the smell of choco, I sat up and rubbed my eyes and there was a tray next to me with an am sorry note from Kuda. I just stood up went to the bathroom, looked at myself in the mirror and my cheek was bruised. I took a bath then tried to hide the bruise with makeup. I put on my peach denim and white Tee then packed a few clothes. Headed downstairs and found everyone having breakfast playing happy family mxm may thunder fire them?

"Kwakana (is everything ok)" said Melissa "Good

morning" I said on a low note "Hey Anele"

Nicholine answered

"Where are you going" Kuda asked

"My mother's"

"Without out telling me" he said and I could tell he wanted to yell but his brother stopped him.

"I'll drive you" said Raymond as he stood up and walked upto me then took my bag and walked to the door.

I followed him, he opened the car door for me. Got in then drove off well he was using a GPS.

"He regrets it and he's sorry" said Raymond breaking the silence

"I don't want to talk about it" I answered "He was just angry"

"Don't make excuses for him" I said "He loves you! He was just angry"

"Still that doesn't give him the right to hit me" I said

"I can beat him up for you if that'll make you feel better"

"No that's not necessary" I chuckled

"How about we make a U turn and go back home you don't want your mother seeing you like this. It'll break her heart"

"Well she needs to see the kind of monster she sold me to" I said

"You don't mean that" "Well I do" I

replied

"Well am sorry for my brother's behaviour and please don't leave him"

"Fine let's go back! Are you always this calm" I said

"Sometimes but one thing for sure am good with woman"

"Fine! But am still mad at him" I said

"You know I can hold him for you while you beat him up" "I

don't want to beat him up" I laughed

"Well if you change your mind am here" "I'll

keep that in mind" I said

Then we went back but first we passed by the coffee shop since I didn't have breakfast then I bought a new phone after that we headed home because Nicholine was blowing up his phone. We got home and I went straight to my room well am still not talking to Kuda. I was scared to go on social media with the fans blowing up my inbox saying all negative things about me cheating on my husband. A call came through and it was a private number I think I should start rejecting calls from private numbers.

Me: Anele!

Voice: Am not happy Anele!

Me: Andile what do you want from me.

Voice: He hit you! Why would you let him lay a hand on you
(shouting)

Me: How do you even know that?

Him: I have eyes everywhere sweetheart

Me: First of all don't call me that and second I don't answer to you plus this is all your fault and stop calling me.

Him: I know you don't want to be in that marriage, I can help you get out you know

(I kept quiet thinking do I really want to leave?) Me:

Am listening!

Him: You can use your age as an advantage then mention that he hit you trust me in a month you'll be a free woman.

Me: Am not prisoned Andile

Him: But you were forced to get married

Me: So you want me to leave Kuda then come to you (I chuckled) that's like moving from cell to

Him: Well at least you'll be the only wife and I'd never hit you. I can give you the world Anele only if you let me

Me: I don't want the world

Him: By the way you looked good today. Bye! Me:

Andile are you stalking me?

He had already hung up. I sat down and thought about Andile's offer should I take it? Or should I continue being abused by Kuda well I don't blame him but still it doesn't give him the right to hit me. The door opened and it was Nicholine

"Hey!" I said as I sat up and folded my legs

"Hey Anele" she said in a soft voice, she's like the other version of Chido. Sweet and innocent.

"May I help you" I asked

"I wanted to say lunch is ready" "Thanks but

am full" I answered "What happened to

your cheek?" "Long story" I answered

"He hit you didn't he?" "Yeah" I

nodded

"You know you can report him for that"

"Excuse me!" I said confused I mean why would she suggested I get him arrested

"Let him spend a night in jail, next time he'll learn never to lay a hand on a woman"

"Okay" I chuckled

"But don't tell him I said that 😊" "My lips are sealed" I laughed "Now let's go have lunch"

"Am not hungry" I answered "Then you'll have an apple" "Am behind you" I said

"No let's go together"

"Fine" I got off the bed and put on my flip flops then followed Nicholine downstairs. I just took an apple then to sit by the TV.

"Hey wife" said Raymond as he sat next to me

"Hie!"

"What are you watching" he asked

"Animation!"

"Cartoons?" he said "A little different"

"Well I wanted to say come join us you know what they say: a family that eats together stays together" he said and I laughed

"The last time I checked it was a family that prays together 😊"

"Whatever just come join us" he said "Am not hungry"

"Even am not hungry but am just sitting there, come join me" he said

"But I don't want to"

"Please don't make me beg you because I will" he said

"Fine!" I said as he helped me up then we went to the table. Melissa was out so it was just Ray, Nicholine, Kuda and me. I sat next to Raymond who for some reason ended up swapping chairs with Kuda. Raymond and Nicholine left the table leaving me with Kuda well I wasn't actually eating I was just poking the salad with a fork.

"Stop doing that" Kuda said and I did it on purpose making a lot of noise.

"God Anele" he snatched the fork from my hands and I ignored him and took another one and started making the noise again. Then he gave me a death stare

"Can I help you" I asked

"Stop that" he took the fork and threw it on the table.

"So now am not allowed to eat" I asked

"Stop being childish"

"I am a child after all" I mumbled "Anele what do you want from me?"

"You hit me Kuda and you expect me to move on like nothing happened" I said

"You kissed my friend Anele what did you expect"

"He kissed me and I pushed him off and if I wanted him I'd be with him right now" I said

"Don't start please!"

"You shouldn't have hit me" I said "Am sorry ok I was just angry"

"Well I was also angry when then forced me to marry you but did I go around hitting people" I asked

"Am sorry Anele it's just that I love you too much its frustrating"

"You do not hit someone you love Kuda" I said "Am sorry!"

"And am not having an affair with Andile" I said

"I know and am sorry please tell what I have to do for you to forgive me and I will do it"

"I want a house" I folded my arms "What🤨"

"You want me to forgive you right, then buy me a house" I replied

"What's wrong with this one? Plus I can't have you living far from me"

"Who said anything about me living far from you, I just want a house" I said keeping a straight face well he can't just hit me and get away with it

"Am definitely going bankrupt this year" he sighed" Fine find a house you like and I'll buy it for you"

"Then I forgive you" I said

"Why didn't you ask to go shopping with my card like other women?"

"Honey I can afford to take myself shopping with my own money" I said.

"Did you call me honey" he asked "No!"

"You did" he smiled

"I don't know why you're smiling by am going to leave before you start being weird"

"Come here" he pulled me to him arms making me lay my head on his chest

"What do you want Kuda"

"Just a hug from my wife" he answered

"Well wrap it up because I need to "

"Will you shut up for second and just enjoy the moment" he said

"What moment?"

"Shush Anele" He said and I giggled [11/02,

09:06] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 24

*** Andile ***

After talking to the queen of my heart I went and took a shower, after that I headed downstairs and found Melissa sitting on the couch well she's helping me out since we both want the same thing and that is separating Kuda and Anele.

"This is not your husband's house Melissa, you can't just show up whenever you like" I said

"Am sorry I just needed some air"

"Go play with your kid or something else! Go fix your hair and nails like other ladies you'll find air there" I said

"Why do you have to be so rude? What happened to we going to work together?"

"We working together but that doesn't make me your friend. So what do you want" I asked

"Like I said I needed some air since everything revolves around Anele in our house worse Nicholine and her husband are there"

"Raymond is in town? I haven't seen him in ages. And how's Anele I hope your husband didn't lay a hand on her" I said

"Really? You can't even ask me how I am"

"That's your husband's job. Am asking about Anele" I said

"Well your little treasure has a bruised face"

"How dare he?" I yelled "Well she's his wife"

"Shut up! She's mine you hear me mine and your husband is going to pay for laying a hand on her" I clenched my teeth

"We talked about this Andile no one gets hurt, you get your Anele and I have my husband to myself"

"Well things changed when he decided to touch my woman"
I said

"But Andile on a serious note so you'd ruin your friendship with Kuda over a woman"

"Well he started it when he took you from me" I replied

"You said you were ok with me being with him"

"Well he made you happy and that's all I ever wanted, to see you happy" I answered

"Do you still love me?"

"Weren't you listening all along? I love Anele" I said

"She's just a kid I don't get it, what does she have that makes everybody like her so much"

"She's unique" I answered

"Let me go back to my husband since Miss Universe went to her mother's" she said getting up

"Anele is not at her mother's" "She left this morning" she said

"She came back, she was at the coffee shop with Ray"

"Great! Why does everyone have to like her so much♀ sometimes I just wish I can strangle her in her sleep" I said

"She loses a hair and you lose your life"

"Geez Andile am just joking! Why do I get a feeling Anele is turning you to a Psycho" she said heading out.

I sat on the couch and poured myself scotch going through my messages well I don't care about what the public thinks, its funny Kuda hasn't even asked me about the kiss, I guess Anele is turning him into a weakling but hey I wouldn't blame him, she's also making me do the craziest things.

*** Anele ***

9 days went by and I've forgiven Kuda although he hates it when I bring it up every time we fight and yes we fight like a lot, Kuda is just insecure.

We still with Raymond and his wife. Melissa is also there but she's hardly at home then there's Andile who just won't leave me alone, am scared to even tell Kuda about him because am scared Kuda might lash out like he did last time. Am still modelling for the company and we cleared the rumours thank God. Well Kuda has me with guards 24/7 and they suffocating me. I was coming from a photo shoot when my

phone rang, I was in Kuda's office waiting for him. Sitting on his chair. It was my father.

Me: Am sending money Dad I didn't forget. Him:

That's not why am calling

Me: Well whatever it is I don't want to hear it Him:

Am still your father Anele

Me: The same father who chose his mistress over his family

Him: Anele I didn't chose her over you

Me: You left us! You knew we couldn't survive without you but you left anyway

Him: Your mother said she wanted nothing to do with me and I had to leave.

Me: Do you blame her? You abused her. You know what am sending the money bye!

Him: Anele please hear me out.

Me: You're saying this because you're sober we both know you always insult me accusing me of being responsible of you not following your dreams.

I hung up and wiped the tears on my face. Kuda entered the room...

"Why are you crying" he asked sitting on the table

"Nothing!"

"What did I say about hiding things from me" he said

"It's my dad and I don't want to talk about it"

"You shouldn't let him get to you" he said "I

know" I said as I stood up to hug him. "I have a surprise for you"

"Is it food because I think that's the only thing that can cheer me up right now" I said

"Well it's better than that" he said as he took off his tie.

"You tell me you going to tie me up"

"I wish" he laughed "Am going to cover your eyes" "Ok although I don't fully trust you"

"Ouch" he said "Am kidding"

"It's not too tight right" he asked as he covered my eyes with it. "Let's go!"

"How am I supposed to walk with my eyes covered?"

"Am going to pick you up so don't panic" he said and as he lifted me up with my hands wrapped on his neck and I could feel him walking.

"Where are we going?"

"It's a surprise" he answered "Ok where are we now?"

"We passing by the reception" he answered "Are people watching us?"

"Yes!" he laughed "No put me down"

"Don't even think about it" he said "Are we there?"

"Patience woman" he said putting me down "Okay then"

"I need you to watch your head and enter the car just follow my lead" he said

"Ouch" I bumped my head

"Sorry" he said the minutes later I heard the car start.

"Where are you taking me Mr Diale?"

"If I tell you it wouldn't be a surprise" he said. "How long have we been driving?"

"5 minutes Anele" he laughed

"It feels like a year with a blind fold on"

"We almost there" he said then we got there and he helped me out of the car.

"There are stairs" he said and I was counting there's 5 steps.

"Are you ready" he asked

"Yeah take it off already" I said as he removed the blindfold. I rubbed my eyes a little they looked around us in a room more like a dining room and it's gorgeous, even nicer than his house. The furniture and the floors are just amazing.

"Wow this place is beautiful whose house is it" I asked touching the leather couch then I sat on it, it's very comfy

"It's yours!" "Excuse me" I said

"It's yours Anele I bought it for you" he said

"No way! I was just joking back there I was just angry"

"Well I wanted to" he said

"Thank you" I hugged him "You like it?"

"I love it" I screamed jumping up and down. "Am glad you love it"

"Thank you!" I said trying hard not to cry but the tears just screamed off my eyes.

"I love you" he said wiping the tears off my cheeks

"You're the best husband ever" I smiled

"You bring up the best in me" he kissed my forehead

"Am definitely taking photos in every corner of this house"

"Knock yourself out well am going to order something to eat"
he said as he perked my lips.

"Let me use your phone, I think I left mine in your office"

"Let me order pizza first" he said as he took it out of his pocket.

"Awe am your screen saver. Sweet" I pouted "You're turning me into a teenager" he laughed "That's a good thing right?"

"Raymond says it is and I trust him" he laughed

🕺🕺🕺🕺 Happy!

[11/02, 20:33] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 25

*** Kudakwashe ***

I could see her shouting but I couldn't hear a thing, the only thing on my mind is Anele. How she was laying on my chest telling me about her day and how she hates the costume change when she's doing a fashion show. I have only been with Anele for 6 months but I can't imagine my life without her. She's growing each and every day she's turning into a woman even her thinking has changed. She was so happy when bought her the house but her happiness means Melissa's misery because she's fuming.

"Kuda are you even listening" Melissa yelled bringing me back from my thoughts.

"Am listening Melissa and am sorry" I answered

"Don't you get tired of apologizing? Why did you buy her a house anyway" he asked

"Because she's my wife and I don't need a reason to spoil her"

"Am also your wife but you don't spoil me? Last time you bought her a car and now it's a house" she yelled

"I didn't buy her a car she bought it herself with her own money that she earns through modelling"

"You said you don't want your wives working yet you let Anele flaunt her body to the world" she said well in my defence Anele is stubborn and she made it clear that she doesn't want to be a housewife and that she doesn't want to depend on my money which I respect.

"Am sorry Melissa!" I hugged her letting her lay on my chest

"That's all you say these days, you always sorry. We don't talk anymore, I kiss my husband"

"I promise will start spending more time with you and less time with Anele" I said

"How about we spend the weekend together maybe go to Durban we hardly go there anymore"

"Ok book the tickets" I answered "Okay" she said

"Now cheer up" I said and she smiled

Do I want to go? No! But she's my wife and I won't deny it I haven't been spending time with her so I have to go with her and make up for the lost time. Am actually glad Chido and Mari left because I don't how I was going to be able to handle all their drama and the funny thing is that I could handle

three wives but now I can't even handle two♀. Melissa went up to her room leaving me in the dinning watching soccer. Nicholine and Ray came down the stairs shouting at each other well am not about to intrude. They went to the kitchen still urging then Raymond came and joined me with a beer in his hands.

"Should I ask or leave it" I asked "Leave it!"

He answered

"Okay! But let's hope you not abusing my wife"

"Nicholine is driving me crazy" he held his head we I guess he wants to talk about it.

"What's going on?"

"She thinks am cheating♂" he answered "And why would she think that?"

"I don't know but I found her trying to open my phone" he said

"Well if you don't have anything to hide then what are you fighting about?"

"It frustrates me that she thinks I'd do something like that to our marriage, these kind of insecurities are the reasons why men end up cheating. Getting accused of something is didn't even do, might as well do it" he clucked

"You don't mean that"

"Am just tired of Nicholine ayy" he said

"Am sorry bro! Do you want me to talk to her?"

"Please do or I might end up killing her with my bare hands"
he said

"Hayi Raymond we don't hit women"

"That's rich coming from you because Anele was bruised a
week ago" he said

"Well I expect you to be better than me"

"Fine but if she disrespects me again am going to show her
that am her husband" he answered.

"Anyway I bumped into Cindy yesterday" well Cindy is my
high school sweetheart you know that one popular girl in
school that everyone wanted well that's Cindy.

"Cindy your high school crush" he asked "I didn't
have a crush on Cindy"

"Everyone in your stream had a crush on Cindy. By the way is
she still pretty" he asked

"She's fair"

"You mean she's ugly now" he asked "I didn't
say ugly I said fair"

"Isn't that the same as ugly" he laughed

"First of all you're a prince and you can't go around calling women ugly that's rude and not gentleman like"

"Fine she's fair! Then I might as well tell you that Maria is fair" he laughed

"Don't start will me?"

While we were still talking Anele entered well she had to go to office to get her phone.

"Hey wife" said Ray

"Hey husband (then she turned to me) Hey Kuda"

"So he get to be called husband but am called by my name" I asked

"Well I am her husband aren't I. Come tell hubby about your day" said Ray then she looked at me before walking to Ray

"Well nothing interesting happened just the usual boring staff" said Anele as she sat next to Ray.

"Well I know how to make your day better, how about we go clubbing" said Raymond

"No Ray she's too young for that"

"If she's married then she old enough come on Anele let's go" he said

"Well I have never been to a club before or drank alcohol" said Anele

"And you're not going to start today please Ray this is a bad idea" I said

"She's be fine well you can come with us if you way"
Raymond asked

"I have to go to Durban with Melissa" I said

"Relax Kuda she'll be fine I'll guard her with my life" said Ray

"Well do you want to go" I asked Anele and she nodded.

"If it's ok with you of course" she said

"You can go but please Ray don't let her get drunk" I said

"You have my word"

"I'll go change" said Anele heading upstairs and I followed her.

"Are you sure you're going to be ok" I asked

"I'll be with Raymond and the guards so don't worry" she answered

"I still think it's a bad idea"

"I can stay if that's what you want" she said, to know I don't want her to go but I don't want it looking like am controlling her or anything

"Go but stay with your guards all the time" "Yes

Papi!" She smiled biting her lower lip "Don't do

that! You know what it does to me"

"Let me go" she said

"So you just going to leave me like this? No kiss no nothing?"

"You'll get it from Melissa" she said closing the door, I hate it when she does that. I asked her for something then she says get it from Melissa.

My phone rang and it was my father

Me: Evening!

Him: We are getting you another wife! Me:

What 🤔 why?

Him: From the looks of it you don't want to make Anele pregnant then we might as well get someone to carry your child for you.

Me: I can get someone to carry my child maybe a surrogate but please not another wife

Him: What's a surrogate?

Me: ♀ I can get someone to carry my child for me and the baby will have my genes and Anele's

Him: What kind of witchcraft is that? Me: It's

science dad

Him: To hell with science I was a grandchild and I want it done the right way. And am telling you that am bringing number 3 or should I say 5

Me: I don't want another wife Dad Him: Am not asking you Kuda

Me: And am telling you that I don't need another wife Him: Kudakwashe am your father and you will listen to me Me: Am not a kid anymore

Him: What has that little girl done to you?

Me: She opened my eyes it's about time you stop treating me like a kid

Him: Kudakwashe it's either you marry another girl or am cutting you off

Me: Really Dad?

Him: And by cutting you off I mean in everything, you'll no longer be my son.

I went quiet for a moment, I don't want another wife♂ if my dad disowns me it means am out of the family business but it'll be worth it, at least I'll be with the women of my life but then there's Melissa♂how do I tell her that I don't love her anymore. Is Anele really worth the trouble?

Me: I guess you disowning then Him:

Kudakwashe!

Me: Am sorry but I love Anele and am not marrying another woman, in fact am separating with Melissa.

Him: How can you embarrass our family like that?

Me: We embarrassed ourselves when you made me marry 4 wives.

I then hung up and threw myself on the bed! I looked at the door and Melissa was standing there crying. I guess she heard the whole thing.

"You're leaving me?" She asked

"Am sorry Melissa I was going to tell you" I said

"Kuda I love you" she cried

"Am sorry Melissa but I'd be lying if I said I loved you too because my heart is with Anele"

"Kuda we have a kid together♀ so you going to let your daughter grow up without her father" she asked

"Am not abandoning my child Melissa am just separating with you"

"Kuda please! I love you 😞 tell me what I have to do to make you love me again and I will" she cried

"Am sorry Melissa" I hugged her and let her crying her heart out and I won't lie it killed me to tell the mother of my child that I don't want her anymore. I do love her but I love Anele more.

[12/02, 09:53] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 26

*** Anele ***

We got to the club and it's not like in the movies, the music is too loud and it reeks of alcohol and sweat. We got in and from the looks of it Raymond is well known because he was greetings literally everyone. We went and sat down someplace that was reserved I guess that's their VIP. We sat down, Raymond order drinks then a group of girls or should I say woman came and joined us, the drinks tasted awful but they make you keep wanting more. From the looks of it

Raymond's plan was to get wasted because he was drowning himself in beer like he's trying to forget something.

"So are you here alone" said one lady with pink hair 🙌 "If you alone we can keep you company" said the other

"Sorry ladies but am with my wife" answered Raymond

"This is your wife" one of them asked

"She looks so young" said the other

"Well I like them young" Ray answered and I chuckled "Is she even old enough to be here" they asked

"I think you've overstayed your welcome ladies" said Rey then one of the guards led them out.

"Having fun" Ray asked "Sort of!" I answered

"Take this" he said handing me a drink "What's that?"

"Something to get you in the mood" he said and I took it and it's stronger than what I was having. And he was right it got me in the mood. The last thing I remember was some guy fighting with his women then Ray tried to play hero that's when all hell broke loose. I don't remember anything from there.

I woke up in a nicely decorated room, I sat up my head is pounding and my stomach feels like it's inside out. I looked around but I don't recognize the room then I looked at myself, am wearing an oversized t shirt more like a man's t shirt. Don't tell me it's what I think it is♀. The door opened and Andile walked in with a tray of food in his hands. God no!

"Morning princess" he said

"What are you doing here" I asked "I live here"

"How did I get here" I asked

"I drove you here after you went wild at the club"

"What do you mean" I asked

"Long story short Ray started a fight and I was there to rescue you so you're welcome"

"And why am I not wearing my clothes" I asked

"That's remind me you owe me a new shirt. You vomited on my favourite shirt and on yourself also I had taken off your clothes"

"I want to go home" I said "Eat then I'll get you an Uber"

"You didn't do anything to me didn't you" I asked "If I did you'd remember" he kissed my forehead

"Thank you for the food and sorry for vomiting on you"

"Anything for the queen of my heart" he said

"Andile!"

"I will do whatever it takes to have you Anele" he said

"Am married Andile!"

"You know I love you and I'd do anything for you "he said

"Don't!"

"Just give me the chance Anele and I promise I'll give you the world" he said before leaving the room. Well I guess he's still the crazy Andile but I respect him for not taking advantage of me. I ate then took a shower, Andile gave me my clothes well then were clean now then he got me an Uber, I don't know whether to thank him or what but am grateful for him watching over me. I got home and found Kuda urging with someone on the phone

Kuda: "What do you mean you don't know where she is ? You promised to take care of her. I swear if anything happens to you I'll kill you " He laughs a little

"Saves you right..... Let's just hope she's fine. Let's think positive" then I clear my throat "Thank your spirits she's

here. Don't talk like that about my wife" then he hangs up and walks up to me.

"Hey! Are you ok" he asked "Yeah am fine"

"Am sorry I wasn't there to protect you. Are you sure you're ok nothing happened to you right" he asked

"Am fine"

"Where did you sleep" he asked well I can't tell him I slept at Andile's he'll kill me.

"At a friend's"

"Am glad you ok" he hugged me "Where's everybody?"

"Well Ray is at the hospital and Nicholine is with him" he answered

"Why? What happened?"

"Well I kind of lost it when he said he didn't know where you were" he said

"You hit him? He's your brother"

"I know and am sorry but he promised to take care of you" he said

"But am fine"

"I know and I'll apologize to him. Are you hungry" he asked

"No I already ate I just want to go to bed and shouldn't you be in Durban?"

"Long story short Melissa left" he replied "Why?"

"Because I want to be with you" he answered "No

Kuda♀you have a kid together"

"I know but my heart is with you" he said "Why

do you love me so much?"

"Even I don't know" he sighed

"Kuda am I worth losing your daughter?"

"Am not losing her! I'll still be there for her" he said

"Am going to go rest and process all this, my head hurts" I said.

Now am his only wife♀ 3 women left because of me. I hate how Kuda is making all these decisions because me being his only wife is like putting more pressure on me. I have to play wife, give him kids but I don't want that I want to go clubbing and have fun like children my age. I was woken up by my buzzing phone. I answered without checking caller ID....

Me: Hello!

Voice: I hope you're happy?

Me: What? (I sat up and rubbed my eyes before checking caller ID and it was a private number)

Voice: Soon he's going to get tired of you and he's going to marry someone else.

Me: And I can't wait for that day!

Well am still sleepy and not about to start entertaining someone who wants to play games, I hung up and threw the phone on the headboard, it rang again and I ignored it but it kept ringing.

Me: Can I please sleep in peace? Voice: 😊

hangover? (It's Ray)

Me: I feel like my stomach threw up inside me Him:

Am sorry for letting you drink that much

Me: It's ok I actually had fun and am sorry for Kudu's behaviour

Him: Well I kind of deserved it

Me: No you didn't by the way is that offer of holding him while am beat him up still on?

Him: 😊 well after what he did to me I think am now scared of him

Me: He didn't hurt you didn't her Him: Am

in the hospital duh

Me: Are you ok though

Him: Yeah just broken ribs by I'll live Me: Am

sorry

Him: It's ok just wanted to check if you're ok Me:

Am fine but can I go back to sleep?

Him: Ok see you later.

I then drifted to sleep. This time I was woken up by Kuda.

"Kuda leave me alone" I covered my head with the blanket

"That's enough sleep for one day, wake up or you going to get sick" he said

"Kuda leave me alone!"

"Wake up!" He pulled the blanket off me and I could feel him carrying me.

"Where are you talking me" I asked with my eyes still closed and he dropped me in water.

"It's burning daylight! Wake up" He laughed and I stood up on my feet he just dropped me in a tub full of water.

"Kudakwashe!" I yelled

"You have a shoot in 30 minutes" "Am sick" I

said.

"A hangover isn't being sick now get. You said you wanted to work right? Well get to work"

"Please can I skip this one please?" I said wrapping my arms around his neck wetting his clothes

"Don't try to sweet talk me out of this" "Please

Kuda!" I sulked "Please just this once"

"Fine but just this one and stop touching me you're making my clothes wet"

"Thank you!"

Then there was a knock and he went and opened it, I could hear them talking and the helper sad something about Maria being here♀Why is Maria here?

[12/02, 19:24] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 27

I took a bath then headed downstairs, I sat on the couch next to Kuda laying my head on his shoulder. Well my stomach still hurts and I have been vomiting the whole day.

"How are you feeling" he asked

"It's hurts! My stomach hurts. Why does it hurt so much" I asked

"It's because you were mixing different types of alcohol but you'll be fine"

"Who was at the door" I asked well I know Maria was here but I want to hear it from him

"Not important" he said

"Oh ok" then I text came through his phone and he looked it and sighed heavily.

"What's wrong" I asked "It's nothing"

"What's going on you seem distracted" I asked

"Nothing I can't handle but I have to get to S.A before the end of the week and you're going to be alone, can you handle that?"

"You're going to your parent's? Is there something you not telling me" I asked

"I'll explain everything when I come back but I just need you to promise me that you'll be fine"

"What about Nicholine and Raymond" I asked "They are coming too"

"How come am staying? What's going on?" I asked

"It's complicated but I promise everything will make sense when I come back"

"First Maria comes here then now you want to go to South Africa what is going on Kuda" I asked

"I just need you to trust me"

"Don't tell your parents a forcing you to marry another wife" I asked

"Jesus Anele what is wrong with you?" He yelled

"Don't yell at me Kuda"

"Anele what do you want from, I try to be the perfect husband but in the end we end up fighting. How can you even think that, can't you see that I choose you. I chose you over my family, I chose you over my other wives isn't that proof that I love you" he asked

"I didn't ask you to choose me okay I didn't ask for anything"

"You're ungrateful Anele, ungrateful is what you are" he said

"I don't have time for this am not about to stand here and let you insult me" I took my keys and walked out. Honestly even

I don't know why we are fighting. We fighting over nothing, I went to my house and slept there

The following morning I was woken up by the shower running, I sat up and rubbed my eyes, Kuda came out of the bathroom with a towel wrapped around his waist.

"Morning!" I said "Morning!"

"You slept here" I asked

"Well you'd know if you didn't sleep like a dead person"

"We I need my beauty sleep" I said

"Stop drooling" he said, I didn't even realize I was staring.

"You're my husband aren't you?"

"Just last night you walked out on me and now you want to talk" he asked

"Last night is last night"

"Well still mad at you" he said

"Are you sure about that" I asked as I got out of bed

"Do ever do that again! Don't ever walk out on me or disrespect me" he said

"Am sorry!"

"What are you doing" he asked as I unbuttoned my P.J shirt

"Am going to bath" "Don't tempt me"

he said "Am I tempting you🙈?"

"Anele I will destroy you" he laughed "Dream on!"

I slammed the door in his face "Not cool" he called

out

"That's for yelling at me"

3 days later Kuda and his brother went to South Africa leaving me all by myself in that big house so I had to invite my mother well it was Kuda's idea but at least I won't be alone

"Your house is beautiful my child" said mum as she sat on the couch, she came this morning

"Thanks mum but I have to love you and leave. I have to go pay my car insurance"

"Haibo Anele you leaving me alone in this big house" she asked

"I won't take long mum, I promise plus the helpers are here"

"Ok mntanami but first I want to tell you something" she said

"Mum you'll tell me when I come back"

"It's important nana" she said and I sat down the age held my hands.

"What is ma!?"

"Your father never left you Anele" she said

"Don't try to justify him mum, he left us for his mistress"

"No Anele I was the mistress" he said

"I don't follow"

"I was his secretary Anele" he said

"Then why would you lie to me mum, all those years I hated him for leaving me. So he left you and went back to his wife?"

"Yes! She answered

"Does this mean I have other half-sister?"

"No he was with me because his wife was barren" she said

"Mum why didn't you tell me all this?"

"Am sorry baby I just didn't want you to feel bad" he looked down

"And you think you know someone🙄"

"Am sorry but I thought you should know" she said

"So that's what he meant when he said am a home wrecker like you"

"Am sorry you had to go through that and I hope one day you'll forgive me" she said

"You're my mother of course I forgive you" I said as I hugged her. I can't believe I blamed my father for leaving me♀when mum knew the truth all along.

I went paid the insurance then passed by one of the restaurants, well Kuda left me in charge. My phone rang and it was Kuda.

Him: Hey wife! Me: Hey husband!

Him: I miss you

Me: You left this morning. Him: Feels

like a year Me:😊 did you fly safe

Him: Yes we landed 30 minutes ago, it was the longest flight ever with Raymond and his wife fighting

Me: I can imagine😊

Him: So what are you doing? Me: Am at

the restaurant

Him: You mean you staffing yourself with cake

Me: In my defence they make the best cakes

Him: You're a model remember? You're not supposed to be eating that.

Me: Just this once

Him: And if you gain more like a gram I will fire you myself.

Me: Try me! I will burn down the studio

Him: We both know you crazy Me: You

like me crazy

Him: Yeah I fell in love with your craziness. Let me get going I'll call you later

Me: Ok send my regards to your parents

I then drove back home and found my mother with Andile♀What is he doing here.

"Why are you here" I asked

"Your friend is he, I told him to wait up for you" said mum

"Hey not my friend mum and Andile why are you here" I asked

"I'll leave you two" said mum "Andile why are you here?"

"I missed you plus you owe me a shirt" he said

"I don't owe you anything now go before I call security on you"

"Your feistiness is kind of a turn on" he smiled

"What is wrong with you?"

"Am in love that's what's wrong with me" he answered

"Listen to me Andile and listen carefully, I may be young but I know what I want and that is not you. Am married and you should respect that. Worse am married to you. I suggest you leave or I swear your dead body will be in the news. You should be ashamed of yourself" I clucked then called security to kick him out

"Is everything ok" asked mum coming down the stairs "No mum! You shouldn't just let strangers into the house"

"Sorry nana I thought he was a friend" she said

"Anyway did you eat?" "Not yet" she answered

"How about we go out for lunch?"

"Ok my child and to think 7 months ago you were just an ordinary girl but now you're the Prince's wife and a model" she smiled

"So what would you like to have?" "Anything that you having" she answered

"Am having salad mum"

"Then am having pork ribs" she laughed

But if you think of it, if my mother didn't force me into this then I wouldn't be here, I wouldn't be a model. We went and had lunch although I was still full from that cake I had.

"Is he treating you right" mum asked "We could say that" I answered

"Good because I don't want the same thing that happened to me and your father" she said

"Well at least am not his mistress"

"Anele!" She looked down, I know I shouldn't be hard on her but why did she feel the need to twist the story there's nothing wrong with being a single mother and I don't see why she was ashamed of it.

"Am sorry but on the bright side if you didn't have an affair with him then I wouldn't be here"

"I think we should get going, it looks like it's about to rain" she said

"Okay let's go" I picked up my bag "Aren't you going to pay?"

"They won't let me since Kuda owns it" "Okky let's go!"

[12/02, 23:14] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 28

*** Kudakwashe ***

The tension in the room can be cut with a knife, my dad is sitting on his throne as usual with mother next to him and then the elders (my uncles and aunties) sitting on the couch. Maria is sitting on the couch opposite me with her baby in her arms, I can't believe she already has a baby yet I found out about her pregnancy 5 months ago. The reason why she was at my house the other day is because she claims the baby is mine but 5 months ago she said it wasn't so I don't know what's what and to top it all the baby is male♂ I don't know why they even called me here because the last time I checked I was no longer their son and they cut me off the company, some of my credit cards were even blocked they wanted nothing to do with me. On the other hand mother was over the moon she's always wanted a male grandchild well they all did but I don't believe Maria, she could be lying

for all we know. Maybe she just wants to ruin things for me and Anele whom I miss like crazy.

"Finally we have a heir, finally I can step down as chief knowing the legacy will live on" said Philip

"You did well son" Grace smiled

"So we should get on with the process of crowning Kudakwashe after all he is the rightful heir to the throne" said one of my uncles and everyone is all smiles but am not buying it, just two weeks ago these people wanted nothing to do with me. Thank God I had my fashion company and the restaurants otherwise I'd be in the streets as we speak.

"We don't even know whether the baby is mine or not" I said in a soft voice

"What are you saying Kuda? She's your wife of course it's your baby" Philip said

"Well why don't you ask her where she's been living the past 5 months because she hasn't been living with me" I said

"What are you saying Kuda" Grace asked

"Long story short Maria and I separated and am not even sure that baby is even mine and if the baby is mine then I'll take responsibility but Maria and I can never be together"

"Are you crazy? What will people say I'd they found out you can't even handle your wives" Philip yelled

"Wife Father! Because I only have one wife and that is Anele"
I answered.

"Kuda what are you not telling us" one of my aunties asked

"Like I said I only have one wife now and I don't need to explain myself to anyone so can we wrap it up because I miss my wife"

"Kuda that's not how I raised you. Since when did you become this disrespectful" Grace asked

"You and dad made me like this you made me like this the day you disowned me"

"That's in the past son! Now that you have a heir let's focus on making you chief" said Philip

"I don't want to be chief, crown one of my brothers. I can't stay here in fact I won't stay here because am life is back in Zimbabwe with my wife"

"If that's what you want then fine" said Philip (father) and everyone gasped looking at him, I did not see that coming.

"You ok with it" I asked

"Yes and am proud of you son for standing out for yourself and what you believe in" he said, I don't know whether my ears are deceiving me or what. Who is this man or maybe he hasn't taken his pills yet because this doesn't sound like my father at all.

"Then who'll step in for you? Kuda has to be chief after you, it's by tradition" Grace (mother) asked

"Raymond can chief plus he has 2 male children" I suggested

"Fine then we crowning Raymond" said dad

"Philip are you listening to yourself" mum asked

"Let him live his life Grace after all its just life. It's going to end soon" said father as he left the room. Everyone followed leaving me with Maria whom I want to murder right now. This woman has the nerve.

"Who's the father of the baby Maria" I asked in a firm voice

"You are" she said looking down

"Then why did you say it wasn't mine?"

"Because that's what I thought" she sniffed trying to hold back the tears that were clouding in her eyes

"Then what changed? What changed Maria?"

"When I gave birth to him that's when I realized he's yours because he has the same birthmark as your daughter" she answered

"That doesn't mean anything Maria"

"I had a DNA test done and he's yours Kuda. Please forgive me "she cried

"Why are you even crying? I should be the one angry Maria first you cheat on me then you sleep with another man while carrying my child. Then you have the nerve to come crying to

me. How dare you Maria? You were my wife and you cheated on me" I yelled

"Am sorry please Kuda we can fix things, am still the same Maria you feel in love with?"

"We're not fixing anything Maria we are done, I will support my children but I want nothing to do with you" I said

"Kuda please! I was weak and am sorry I promise I'll be a good wife" she cried

"I already have a wife and will never forgive you for this Maria"

"Am sorry! Please do it for our son 🤔 please I want to come home and we can be a family once more" she said

"No Maria in fact am taking my kids, I don't want them growing up around you"

"Please Kuda don't take them away from me please they are all I have" she cried

"You should have thought about before you went sleeping around" I said leaving the room. I punched the wall leaving my hand bruised mxm she even has the nerve to beg me to take her back after she cheated and made me miss my child's birth, he's now a month old and she's only telling me now that he's mine. My phone buzzed and it was Anele...

Me: My other half

Her: Hey husband (I could hear her giggling) Me:

How are you?

Her: You're angry! What's wrong? Me: Am

not angry (I sighed heavily)

Her: You're my husband remember, I know when you're angry your voice becomes deep when you're angry

Me: Fine you win!

Her: Do you want to talk about it? Me: Not

really

Her: Only if you were here I was going to give you a massage, which always cheers you up

Me: Because you're going with your hands Her: I

miss you! Will you come back already?

Me: I miss you more, I promise I'll be home in 72 hours

Her: 3 days is a lot I want you to come back tomorrow.

Mother is ruining my diet.

Me: Is that why you miss me 😊

Her: Well you did threaten to fire me if I gained weight

Me: And you threatened to burn my company so am now scared of you

Her: I also miss fighting with you

Me: You always know how to brighten my day Her: I
also know how to ruin it

Me: True! 😊

Her: So how are things going there? Me:

Well...

Her: You'll explain when you get here? Me: Yes!

Her: Ok then

Me: Take care of yourself for me Her:

Always

Me: Good girl Her: Kuda!

Me: Yes!

Her: I love you!

Me: I love you more!

This is the first time she's told me she loves me. She sure
knows how to make my day now that's a keeper.

[16/02, 18:55] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 29

*** Anele ***

It's been 2 weeks now and Kuda still isn't back from South Africa and I miss him. He doesn't want to tell me wants going on but whatever it is am sure he's handling it.

(Phone rings) It's Ria she's Kuda's secretary from the Fashion Company

Me: Hey Ria!

Her: Morning ma'am how are you

Me: For the one hundred time I prefer my name

Her: Yes! Anele there's a slight problem and we need you ASAP

Me: What happened?

Her: Someone is here for you.

Me: Who and what does the person want from me?

Her: I think it'll be best if you came and heard it directly from him

Me: Is it that bad? Her: Kind of

Me: Ok am on my way Her: Ok!

I rushed to my mother's room to tell her that I'll be going out and I found her all dressed up and she's transformed I mean I've only been with her for 2 week but she's glowing. She actually looks happy!

"Looking good mum" I smiled

"Hey Anele! Do you think this dress suits me" she asked

"Yeah you look gorgeous. Going somewhere?"

"Yes I have a date" she answered "A date 🤔"

"Why do you sound so shocked" she asked looking at herself in the mirror

"A date 😊 You're old mum"

"Am just 38 hawu" she answered to think of it she's just 7 years older than Kuda.

"That's still old and its awkward coming from you but enjoy your date"

"I will" she smiled

"Anyway I have to get to the office, one of the drivers will drive you to wherever your date is"

"Ok mntanami (my child) see you tomorrow" she said

"You not even coming back?"

"Anele I have a life" she said

"You mean you had a boyfriend all along?" "Yes!"

She answered

"And am only finding out now?"

"So you wanted me to tell you that I have a boyfriend" she asked

"Not really but I wanted you to tell me that you found me a new daddy"

"Yooh! You really have grown the Anele I know would have lost it. But mntanami you used to be bitter why?" she said

"Love has changed me mum I think that's what was lacking in my life"

"But I loved you with my all Anele" she said

"Am not saying you didn't but I think I was angry at dad for leaving me that I ended up taking it out on people"

"Did you forgive him" she asked "I forgave all of you"

"I love you mntanami always know that" she hugged me "I love you too mum!"

"Hayi Anele see now you making me ruin my make-up" she chuckled

"You look great even without makeup"

"Of course where do you think you got your beauty from" she laughed

"Maybe from my dad"

"Let's agree to disagree" she said

"I just hate him mum but dad is one handsome man"

"Yeah he is" she smiled

"But nothing compared to my husband👹" "So

have you slept with him" she asked "Mum!"

"What? It's nothing to be ashamed of after all I never thought you about that stuff" she said

"Am not having this conversation with you"

"Come on Anele am your mother" she said

"Exactly! The fact that you my mother is the reason why I don't want to talk about it with you"

"Then how did you learn about that" she asked

"Mum! Let me get to work before this conversation becomes awkward"

"Ok see you!" She said as I closed the door then drove to the office. I wonder what's so important because Ria never calls me, she doesn't even like me.

My phone buzzed and it was Kuda.

Me: Hey husband!

Him: Why won't you let your driver and bodyguards do their jobs?

Me: 😊 because I can drive myself and I sure don't need no bodyguards.

Him: Where are you rushing to? Me: Again

with keeping tabs on me Him: Am just making

sure you're ok

Me: No you just checking if am not doing anything shady and I hate it

Him: No! That's not it Me: Then

what?

Him: It's for your safety

Me: Safety from what? What could harm me? Him:

Am sorry!

Me: I have something I need to take care of can I call you back.

Him: Ok can you...

Me: Bye Kuda see you when you come back.

Knowing Kuda he's about to start lecturing me like I don't have a brain of my own. I wonder what's stopping him from coming back because he said he'll be gone for a few days. I passed by the reception heading straight to the offices passing by Ria's desk who was gossiping as usual. Then I got to the office and found Andile sitting on the chair like he owns the place, well he does but that's not the point and he was with someone that looked like a lawyer judging with what he was wearing.

"Good morning Miss Anele" he smiled "What

are you doing here" I asked

"I own the place and why aren't you at work?" He asked ♀♀ he's my boss by the way.

"I don't have any shoots today"

"Ok I was looking at your file and you underage sweetheart" he said

"Wow for real? I didn't know that 😊" I rolled my eyes

"Am serious Anele you're supposed to be at school and not working? You working for us could get us sued" he said and why is he mentioning this now, he knew I was underage when he hired me.

"Well am waiting for my O'level results" I answered "Is it true you're married" the lawyer asked

"What does that have to do with all this? And who are you"

"My name is Takudzwa Nyoni am the company lawyer" he answered as he reached out for a handshake

"What does me being underage have to do with all this and why are you are you two discussing me?"

"According to the law you can only get married when you're 18 and your husband could go to jail for that" Takudzwa answered

"Really Andile? Are you doing all this to get my attention" I asked

"I just want what's best for you" he answered

"By ruining things for me?"

"Did you by any chance get forced into marriage" Takudzwa asked

"No! And stop asking me about my marriage" "We can help you Anele" said Takudzwa

"I don't need help am fine and Andile if you know what's good for you stay out of my business" I said

"Can you please excuse us" Andile said to Takudzwa and he left the room

"What are you trying to prove?"

"Why are you flushing your dreams down the drain like that? Do you want to be a housewife your whole life? Do you know that soon Kuda is going to get tired of you and who knows maybe his parents might marry another wife for him" he said

"Am not a housewife he lets me do what I want and he said I can continue with my studies"

"Wait till he gets you pregnant. You'll be just like all his other wives" he said

"What do you want?"

"I don't want anything am just saying don't throw your future down the drain over a man. First of all ask yourself this. Do you really want to spend the rest of your life with him" he said

"Please! You just want me to leave Kuda so I can be with you"

"Well at least am not 15 years older than you" he answered

"Am not leaving Kuda!"

"Then you're going to watch him go to jail" he said

"You're not going to report him are you?"

"If you leave him I won't. Think of all those years he might spend in jail if the police arrested him" he laughed

"He's your friend! Why do you hate him so much?"

"He took something that was dear to me and am going to do the same" he answered

"So you using me?"

"No! I love you and I'll be doing you a favour by separating you two" he answered

"You're sick!"

"It's your choice princess, it's either you leave him or he goes to jail" he said as he kissed me on the forehead

"Don't touch me! Am not scared of your threats Andile" I said then he called Takudzwa back in

"I'd like to report a..." Then I stopped him before he could finish

"Sorry Mr Nyoni but can you excuse us. Please!"

"I'll be outside" he said leaving the room "What do you want?" I asked

"I want you!"

"Andile bantu. I don't even like you" I said

"Well you didn't like him either but if you give me the chance I can prove myself to you"

"No!" I said with tears running down my cheeks

"It's either that or your husband does life in prison for rape"

"He didn't rape me" I cried

"What's the difference?" "You're also older" I said "Am 27"

"Still old" I said

[11/02, 20:33] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 25

*** Kudakwashe ***

I could see her shouting but I couldn't hear a thing, the only thing on my mind is Anele. How she was laying on my chest telling me about her day and how she hates the costume change when she's doing a fashion show. I have only been with Anele for 6 months but I can't imagine my life without her. She's growing each and every day she's turning into a woman even her thinking has changed. She was so happy when bought her the house but her happiness means Melissa's misery because she's fuming.

"Kuda are you even listening" Melissa yelled bringing me back from my thoughts.

"Am listening Melissa and am sorry" I answered

"Don't you get tired of apologizing? Why did you buy her a house anyway" he asked

"Because she's my wife and I don't need a reason to spoil her"

"Am also your wife but you don't spoil me? Last time you bought her a car and now it's a house" she yelled

"I didn't buy her a car she bought it herself with her own money that she earns through modelling"

"You said you don't want your wives working yet you let Anele flaunt her body to the world" she said well in my defence Anele is stubborn and she made it clear that she doesn't want to be a housewife and that she doesn't want to depend on my money which I respect.

"Am sorry Melissa!" I hugged her letting her lay on my chest

"That's all you say these days, you always sorry. We don't talk anymore, I kiss my husband"

"I promise will start spending more time with you and less time with Anele" I said

"How about we spend the weekend together maybe go to Durban we hardly go there anymore"

"Ok book the tickets" I answered "Okay" she said

"Now cheer up" I said and she smiled

Do I want to go? No! But she's my wife and I won't deny it I haven't been spending time with her so I have to go with her and make up for the lost time. Am actually glad Chido and Mari left because I don't how I was going to be able to handle all their drama and the funny thing is that I could handle three wives but now I can't even handle two♀. Melissa went up to her room leaving me in the dinning watching soccer. Nicholine and Ray came down the stairs shouting at each other well am not about to intrude. They went to the kitchen

still urging then Raymond came and joined me with a beer in his hands.

"Should I ask or leave it" I asked "Leave it!"

He answered

"Okay! But let's hope you not abusing my wife"

"Nicholine is driving me crazy" he held his head we I guess he wants to talk about it.

"What's going on?"

"She thinks am cheating" he answered "And why would she think that?"

"I don't know but I found her trying to open my phone" he said

"Well if you don't have anything to hide then what are you fighting about?"

"It frustrates me that she thinks I'd do something like that to our marriage, these kind of insecurities are the reasons why men end up cheating. Getting accused of something is didn't even do, might as well do it" he clucked

"You don't mean that"

"Am just tired of Nicholine ayy" he said

"Am sorry bro! Do you want me to talk to her?"

"Please do or I might end up killing her with my bare hands"
he said

"Hayi Raymond we don't hit women"

"That's rich coming from you because Anele was bruised a week ago" he said

"Well I expect you to be better than me"

"Fine but if she disrespects me again am going to show her that am her husband" he answered.

"Anyway I bumped into Cindy yesterday" well Cindy is my high school sweetheart you know that one popular girl in school that everyone wanted well that's Cindy.

"Cindy your high school crush" he asked "I didn't have a crush on Cindy"

"Everyone in your stream had a crush on Cindy. By the way is she still pretty" he asked

"She's fair"

"You mean she's ugly now" he asked "I didn't say ugly I said fair"

"Isn't that the same as ugly" he laughed

"First of all you're a prince and you can't go around calling women ugly that's rude and not gentleman like"

"Fine she's fair! Then I might as well tell you that Maria is fair" he laughed

"Don't start will me?"

While we were still talking Anele entered well she had to go to office to get her phone.

"Hey wife" said Ray

"Hey husband (then she turned to me) Hey Kuda"

"So he get to be called husband but am called by my name" I asked

"Well I am her husband aren't I. Come tell hubby about your day" said Ray then she looked at me before walking to Ray

"Well nothing interesting happened just the usual boring staff" said Anele as she sat next to Ray.

"Well I know how to make your day better, how about we go clubbing" said Raymond

"No Ray she's too young for that"

"If she's married then she old enough come on Anele let's go" he said

"Well I have never been to a club before or drank alcohol" said Anele

"And you're not going to start today please Ray this is a bad idea" I said

"She's be fine well you can come with us if you way" Raymond asked

"I have to go to Durban with Melissa" I said

"Relax Kuda she'll be fine I'll guard her with my life" said Ray

"Well do you want to go" I asked Anele and she nodded.

"If it's ok with you of course" she said

"You can go but please Ray don't let her get drunk" I said

"You have my word"

"I'll go change" said Anele heading upstairs and I followed her.

"Are you sure you're going to be ok" I asked

"I'll be with Raymond and the guards so don't worry" she answered

"I still think it's a bad idea"

"I can stay if that's what you want" she said, to know I don't want her to go but I don't want it looking like am controlling her or anything

"Go but stay with your guards all the time" "Yes

Papi!" She smiled biting her lower lip "Don't do

that! You know what it does to me" "Let me go" she

said

"So you just going to leave me like this? No kiss no nothing?"

"You'll get it from Melissa" she said closing the door, I hate it when she does that. I asked her for something then she says get it from Melissa.

My phone rang and it was my father

Me: Evening!

Him: We are getting you another wife! Me:

What🤔 why?

Him: From the looks of it you don't want to make Anele pregnant then we might as well get someone to carry your child for you.

Me: I can get someone to carry my child maybe a surrogate but please not another wife

Him: What's a surrogate?

Me:♀I can get someone to carry my child for me and the baby will have my genes and Anele's

Him: What kind of witchcraft is that? Me: It's

science dad

Him: To hell with science I was a grandchild and I want it done the right way. And am telling you that am bringing number 3 or should I say 5

Me: I don't want another wife Dad

Him: Am not asking you Kuda

Me: And am telling you that I don't need another wife Him:

Kudakwashe am your father and you will listen to me Me:

Am not a kid anymore

Him: What has that little girl done to you?

Me: She opened my eyes it's about time you stop treating me like a kid

Him: Kudakwashe it's either you marry another girl or am cutting you off

Me: Really Dad?

Him: And by cutting you off I mean in everything, you'll no longer be my son.

I went quiet for a moment, I don't want another wife♂ if my dad disowns me it means am out of the family business but it'll be worth it, at least I'll be with the women of my life but then there's Melissa♂how do I tell her that I don't love her anymore. Is Anele really worth the trouble?

Me: I guess you disowning then Him:

Kudakwashe!

Me: Am sorry but I love Anele and am not marrying another woman, in fact am separating with Melissa.

Him: How can you embarrass our family like that?

Me: We embarrassed ourselves when you made me marry 4 wives.

I then hung up and threw myself on the bed! I looked at the door and Melissa was standing there crying. I guess she heard the whole thing.

"You're leaving me?" She asked

"Am sorry Melissa I was going to tell you" I said

"Kuda I love you" she cried

"Am sorry Melissa but I'd be lying if I said I loved you too because my heart is with Anele"

"Kuda we have a kid together♀ so you going to let your daughter grow up without her father" she asked

"Am not abandoning my child Melissa am just separating with you"

"Kuda please! I love you🥺tell me what I have to do to make you love me again and I will" she cried

"Am sorry Melissa" I hugged her and let her crying her heart out and I won't lie it killed me to tell the mother of my child

that I don't want her anymore. I do love her but I love Anele more.

[12/02, 09:53] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 26

*** Anele ***

We got to the club and it's not like in the movies, the music is too loud and it reeks of alcohol and sweat. We got in and from the looks of it Raymond is well known because he was greetings literally everyone. We went and sat down someplace that was reserved I guess that's their VIP. We sat down, Raymond order drinks then a group of girls or should I say woman came and joined us, the drinks tasted awful but they make you keep wanting more. From the looks of it Raymond's plan was to get wasted because he was drowning himself in beer like he's trying to forget something.

"So are you here alone" said one lady with pink hair 🙌 "If

you alone we can keep you company" said the other

"Sorry ladies but am with my wife" answered Raymond

"This is your wife" one of them asked

"She looks so young" said the other

"Well I like them young" Ray answered and I chuckled "Is

she even old enough to be here" they asked

"I think you've overstayed your welcome ladies" said Rey
then one of the guards led them out.

"Having fun" Ray asked "Sort of!" I

answered

"Take this" he said handing me a drink "What's

that?"

"Something to get you in the mood" he said and I took it and
it's stronger than what I was having. And he was right it got
me in the mood. The last thing I remember was some guy
fighting with his women then Ray tried to play hero that's
when all hail broke loose. I don't remember anything from
there.

I woke up in a nicely decorated room, I sat up my head is pounding and my stomach feels like it's inside out. I looked around but I don't recognize the room then I looked at myself, am wearing an oversized t shirt more like a man's t shirt. Don't tell me it's what I think it is♀. The door opened and Andile walked in with a tray of food in his hands. God no!

"Morning princess" he said

"What are you doing here" I asked "I live here"

"How did I get here" I asked

"I drove you here after you went wild at the club"

"What do you mean" I asked

"Long story short Ray started a fight and I was there to rescue you so you're welcome"

"And why am I not wearing my clothes" I asked

"That's remind me you owe me a new shirt. You vomited on my favourite shirt and on yourself also I had taken off your clothes"

"I want to go home" I said "Eat then I'll get you an Uber"

"You didn't do anything to me didn't you" I asked "If I did you'd remember" he kissed my forehead

"Thank you for the food and sorry for vomiting on you"

"Anything for the queen of my heart" he said

"Andile!"

"I will do whatever it takes to have you Anele" he said

"Am married Andile!"

"You know I love you and I'd do anything for you "he said

"Don't!"

"Just give me the chance Anele and I promise I'll give you the world" he said before leaving the room. Well I guess he's still the crazy Andile but I respect him for not taking advantage of me. I ate then took a shower, Andile gave me my clothes well then were clean now then he got me an Uber, I don't know whether to thank him or what but am grateful for him watching over me. I got home and found Kuda urging with someone on the phone

Kuda: "What do you mean you don't know where she is ? You promised to take care of her. I swear if anything happens to you I'll kill you " He laughs a little

"Saves you right..... Let's just hope she's fine. Let's think positive" then I clear my throat "Thank your spirits she's here. Don't talk like that about my wife" then he hangs up and walks up to me.

"Hey! Are you ok" he asked

"Yeah am fine"

"Am sorry I wasn't there to protect you. Are you sure you're ok nothing happened to you right" he asked

"Am fine"

"Where did you sleep" he asked well I can't tell him I slept at Andile's he'll kill me.

"At a friend's"

"Am glad you ok" he hugged me "Where's everybody?"

"Well Ray is at the hospital and Nicholine is with him" he answered

"Why? What happened?"

"Well I kind of lost it when he said he didn't know where you were" he said

"You hit him? He's your brother"

"I know and am sorry but he promised to take care of you" he said

"But am fine"

"I know and I'll apologize to him. Are you hungry" he asked

"No I already ate I just want to go to bed and shouldn't you be in Durban?"

"Long story short Melissa left" he replied

"Why?"

"Because I want to be with you" he answered "No

Kuda♀you have a kid together"

"I know but my heart is with you" he said "Why

do you love me so much?"

"Even I don't know" he sighed

"Kuda am I worth losing your daughter?"

"Am not losing her! I'll still be there for her" he said

"Am going to go rest and process all this, my head hurts" I said.

Now am his only wife♀ 3 women left because of me. I hate how Kuda is making all these decisions because me being his only wife is like putting more pressure on me. I have to play wife, give him kids but I don't want that I want to go clubbing and have fun like children my age. I was woken up by my buzzing phone. I answered without checking caller ID....

Me: Hello!

Voice: I hope you're happy?

Me: What? (I sat up and rubbed my eyes before checking caller ID and it was a private number)

Voice: Soon he's going to get tired of you and he's going to marry someone else.

Me: And I can't wait for that day!

Well am still sleepy and not about to start entertaining someone who wants to play games, I hung up and threw the phone on the headboard, it rang again and I ignored it but it kept ringing.

Me: Can I please sleep in peace? Voice: 😊

hangover? (It's Ray)

Me: I feel like my stomach threw up inside me Him:

Am sorry for letting you drink that much

Me: It's ok I actually had fun and am sorry for Kuda's behaviour

Him: Well I kind of deserved it

Me: No you didn't by the way is that offer of holding him while am beat him up still on?

Him: 😊 well after what he did to me I think am now scared of him

Me: He didn't hurt you didn't her

Him: Am in the hospital duh Me: Are you
ok though

Him: Yeah just broken ribs by I'll live Me: Am
sorry

Him: It's ok just wanted to check if you're ok Me:
Am fine but can I go back to sleep?

Him: Ok see you later.

I then drifted to sleep. This time I was woken up by Kuda.

"Kuda leave me alone" I covered my head with the blanket

"That's enough sleep for one day, wake up or you going to
get sick" he said

"Kuda leave me alone!"

"Wake up!" He pulled the blanket off me and I could feel him
carrying me.

"Where are you talking me" I asked with my eyes still closed
and he dropped me in water.

"It's burning daylight! Wake up" He laughed and I stood up
on my feet he just dropped me in a tub full of water.

"Kudakwashe!" I yelled

"You have a shoot in 30 minutes" "Am sick" I said.

"A hangover isn't being sick now get. You said you wanted to work right? Well get to work"

"Please can I skip this one please?" I said wrapping my arms around his neck wetting his clothes

"Don't try to sweet talk me out of this" "Please Kuda!" I sulked "Please just this once"

"Fine but just this one and stop touching me you're making my clothes wet"

"Thank you!"

Then there was a knock and he went and opened it, I could hear them talking and the helper sad something about Maria being here♀Why is Maria here?

[12/02, 19:24] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 27

I took a bath then headed downstairs, I sat on the couch next to Kuda laying my head on his shoulder. Well my stomach still hurts and I have been vomiting the whole day.

"How are you feeling" he asked

"It's hurts! My stomach hurts. Why does it hurt so much" I asked

"It's because you were mixing different types of alcohol but you'll be fine"

"Who was at the door" I asked well I know Maria was here but I want to hear it from him

"Not important" he said

"Oh ok" then I text came through his phone and he looked it and sighed heavily.

"What's wrong" I asked "It's nothing"

"What's going on you seem distracted" I asked

"Nothing I can't handle but I have to get to S.A before the end of the week and you're going to be alone, can you handle that?"

"You're going to your parent's? Is there something you not telling me" I asked

"I'll explain everything when I come back but I just need you to promise me that you'll be fine"

"What about Nicholine and Raymond" I asked "They are coming too"

"How come am staying? What's going on?" I asked

"It's complicated but I promise everything will make sense when I come back"

"First Maria comes here then now you want to go to South Africa what is going on Kuda" I asked

"I just need you to trust me"

"Don't tell your parents a forcing you to marry another wife" I asked

"Jesus Anele what is wrong with you?" He yelled

"Don't yell at me Kuda"

"Anele what do you want from, I try to be the perfect husband but in the end we end up fighting. How can you even think that, can't you see that I choose you. I chose you over my family, I chose you over my other wives isn't that proof that I love you" he asked

"I didn't ask you to choose me okay I didn't ask for anything"

"You're ungrateful Anele, ungrateful is what you are" he said

"I don't have time for this am not about to stand here and let you insult me" I took my keys and walked out. Honestly even I don't know why we are fighting. We fighting over nothing, I went to my house and slept there

The following morning I was woken up by the shower running, I sat up and rubbed my eyes, Kuda came out of the bathroom with a towel wrapped around his waist.

"Morning!" I said "Morning!"

"You slept here" I asked

"Well you'd know if you didn't sleep like a dead person"

"We I need my beauty sleep" I said

"Stop drooling" he said, I didn't even realize I was staring.

"You're my husband aren't you?"

"Just last night you walked out on me and now you want to talk" he asked

"Last night is last night"

"Well still mad at you" he said

"Are you sure about that" I asked as I got out of bed

"Do ever do that again! Don't ever walk out on me or disrespect me" he said

"Am sorry!"

"What are you doing" he asked as I unbuttoned my P.J shirt

"Am going to bath"

"Don't tempt me" he said

"Am I tempting you👹?"

"Anele I will destroy you" he laughed "Dream on!"

I slammed the door in his face "Not cool" he called

out

"That's for yelling at me"

3 days later Kuda and his brother went to South Africa leaving me all by myself in that big house so I had to invite my mother well it was Kuda's idea but at least I won't be alone

"Your house is beautiful my child" said mum as she sat on the couch, she came this morning

"Thanks mum but I have to love you and leave. I have to go pay my car insurance"

"Haibo Anele you leaving me alone in this big house" she asked

"I won't take long mum, I promise plus the helpers are here"

"Ok mntanami but first I want to tell you something" she said

"Mum you'll tell me when I come back"

"Its important nana" she said and I sat down the age held my hands.

"What is ma!?"

"Your father never left you Anele" she said

"Don't try to justify him mum, he left us for his mistress"

"No Anele I was the mistress" he said

"I don't follow"

"I was his secretary Anele" he said

"Then why would you lie to me mum, all those years I hated him for leaving me. So he left you and went back to his wife?"

"Yes! She answered

"Does this mean I have other half-sister?"

"No he was with me because his wife was barren" she said

"Mum why didn't you tell me all this?"

"Am sorry baby I just didn't want you to feel bad" he looked down

"And you think you know someone 🙄"

"Am sorry but I thought you should know" she said

"So that's what he meant when he said am a home wrecker like you"

"Am sorry you had to go through that and I hope one day you'll forgive me" she said

"You're my mother of course I forgive you" I said as I hugged her. I can't believe I blamed my father for leaving me♀when mum knew the truth all along.

I went paid the insurance then passed by one of the restaurants, well Kuda left me in charge. My phone rang and it was Kuda.

Him: Hey wife! Me: Hey husband!

Him: I miss you

Me: You left this morning. Him: Feels

like a year Me:😊 did you fly safe

Him: Yes we landed 30 minutes ago, it was the longest flight ever with Raymond and his wife fighting

Me: I can imagine😊

Him: So what are you doing? Me: Am at

the restaurant

Him: You mean you staffing yourself with cake Me:

In my defence they make the best cakes

Him: You're a model remember? You're not supposed to be eating that.

Me: Just this once

Him: And if you gain more like a gram I will fire you myself.

Me: Try me! I will burn down the studio

Him: We both know you crazy Me: You

like me crazy

Him: Yeah I fell in love with your craziness. Let me get going I'll call you later

Me: Ok send my regards to your parents

I then drove back home and found my mother with Andile♀What is he doing here.

"Why are you here" I asked

"Your friend is he, I told him to wait up for you" said mum

"Hey not my friend mum and Andile why are you here" I asked

"I'll leave you two" said mum "Andile why are you here?"

"I missed you plus you owe me a shirt" he said

"I don't owe you anything now go before I call security on you"

"Your feistiness is kind of a turn on" he smiled

"What is wrong with you?"

"Am in love that's what's wrong with me" he answered

"Listen to me Andile and listen carefully, I may be young but I know what I want and that is not you. Am married and you should respect that. Worse am married to you. I suggest you leave or I swear your dead body will be in the news. You should be ashamed of yourself" I clucked then called security to kick him out

"Is everything ok" asked mum coming down the stairs "No mum! You shouldn't just let strangers into the house"

"Sorry nana I thought he was a friend" she said

"Anyway did you eat?" "Not yet" she answered

"How about we go out for lunch?"

"Ok my child and to think 7 months ago you were just an ordinary girl but now you're the Prince's wife and a model" she smiled

"So what would you like to have?" "Anything that you having" she answered "Am having salad mum"

"Then am having pork ribs" she laughed

But if you think of it, if my mother didn't force me into this then I wouldn't be here, I wouldn't be a model. We went and had lunch although I was still full from that cake I had.

"Is he treating you right" mum asked "We could say that" I answered

"Good because I don't want the same thing that happened to me and your father" she said

"Well at least am not his mistress"

"Anele!" She looked down, I know I shouldn't be hard on her but why did she feel the need to twist the story there's nothing wrong with being a single mother and I don't see why she was ashamed of it.

"Am sorry but on the bright side if you didn't have an affair with him then I wouldn't be here"

"I think we should get going, it looks like it's about to rain" she said

"Okay let's go" I picked up my bag "Aren't you going to pay?"

"They won't let me since Kuda owns it" "Okky let's go!"

[12/02, 23:14] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 28

*** Kudakwashe ***

The tension in the room can be cut with a knife, my dad is sitting on his throne as usual with mother next to him and then the elders (my uncles and aunties) sitting on the couch. Maria is sitting on the couch opposite me with her baby in her arms, I can't believe she already has a baby yet I found out about her pregnancy 5 months ago. The reason why she was at my house the other day is because she claims the baby is mine but 5 months ago she said it wasn't so I don't know what's what and to top it all the baby is male♂ I don't know why they even called me here because the last time I checked I was no longer their son and they cut me off the company, some of my credit cards were even blocked they wanted nothing to do with me. On the other hand mother was over the moon she's always wanted a male grandchild well they all did but I don't believe Maria, she could be lying for all we know. Maybe she just wants to ruin things for me and Anele whom I miss like crazy.

"Finally we have a heir, finally I can step down as chief knowing the legacy will live on" said Philip

"You did well son" Grace smiled

"So we should get on with the process of crowning Kudakwashe after all he is the rightful heir to the throne" said one of my uncles and everyone is all smiles but am not buying it, just two weeks ago these people wanted nothing to do with me. Thank God I had my fashion company and the restaurants otherwise I'd be in the streets as we speak.

"We don't even know whether the baby is mine or not" I said in a soft voice

"What are you saying Kuda? She's your wife of course it's your baby" Philip said

"Well why don't you ask her where she's been living the past 5 months because she hasn't been living with me" I said

"What are you saying Kuda" Grace asked

"Long story short Maria and I separated and am not even sure that baby is even mine and if the baby is mine then I'll take responsibility but Maria and I can never be together"

"Are you crazy? What will people say I'd they found out you can't even handle your wives" Philip yelled

"Wife Father! Because I only have one wife and that is Anele" I answered.

"Kuda what are you not telling us" one of my aunties asked

"Like I said I only have one wife now and I don't need to explain myself to anyone so can we wrap it up because I miss my wife"

"Kuda that's not how I raised you. Since when did you become this disrespectful" Grace asked

"You and dad made me like this you made me like this the day you disowned me"

"That's in the past son! Now that you have a heir let's focus on making you chief" said Philip

"I don't want to be chief, crown one of my brothers. I can't stay here in fact I won't stay here because am life is back in Zimbabwe with my wife"

"If that's what you want then fine" said Philip (father) and everyone gasped looking at him, I did not see that coming.

"You ok with it" I asked

"Yes and am proud of you son for standing out for yourself and what you believe in" he said, I don't know whether my ears are deceiving me or what. Who is this man or maybe he hasn't taken his pills yet because this doesn't sound like my father at all.

"Then who'll step in for you? Kuda has to be chief after you, it's by tradition" Grace (mother) asked

"Raymond can chief plus he has 2 male children" I suggested

"Fine then we crowning Raymond" said dad

"Philip are you listening to yourself" mum asked

"Let him live his life Grace after all its just life. It's going to end soon" said father as he left the room. Everyone followed leaving me with Maria whom I want to murder right now. This woman has the nerve.

"Who's the father of the baby Maria" I asked in a firm voice

"You are" she said looking down

"Then why did you say it wasn't mine?"

"Because that's what I thought" she sniffed trying to hold back the tears that were clouding in her eyes

"Then what changed? What changed Maria?"

"When I gave birth to him that's when I realized he's yours because he has the same birthmark as your daughter" she answered

"That doesn't mean anything Maria"

"I had a DNA test done and he's yours Kuda. Please forgive me "she cried

"Why are you even crying? I should be the one angry Maria first you cheat on me then you sleep with another man while carrying my child. Then you have the nerve to come crying to me. How dare you Maria? You were my wife and you cheated on me" I yelled

"Am sorry please Kuda we can fix things, am still the same Maria you feel in love with?"

"We're not fixing anything Maria we are done, I will support my children but I want nothing to do with you" I said

"Kuda please! I was weak and am sorry I promise I'll be a good wife" she cried

"I already have a wife and will never forgive you for this Maria"

"Am sorry! Please do it for our son 🙏 please I want to come home and we can be a family once more" she said

"No Maria in fact am taking my kids, I don't want them growing up around you"

"Please Kuda don't take them away from me please they are all I have" she cried

"You should have thought about before you went sleeping around" I said leaving the room. I punched the wall leaving my hand bruised mxm she even has the nerve to beg me to take her back after she cheated and made me miss my child's birth, he's now a month old and she's only telling me now that he's mine. My phone buzzed and it was Anele...

Me: My other half

Her: Hey husband (I could hear her giggling) Me:

How are you?

Her: You're angry! What's wrong?

Me: Am not angry (I sighed heavily)

Her: You're my husband remember, I know when you're angry your voice becomes deep when you're angry

Me: Fine you win!

Her: Do you want to talk about it? Me: Not

really

Her: Only if you were here I was going to give you a massage, which always cheers you up

Me: Because you're going with your hands Her: I

miss you! Will you come back already?

Me: I miss you more, I promise I'll be home in 72 hours

Her: 3 days is a lot I want you to come back tomorrow. Mother is ruining my diet.

Me: Is that why you miss me 😊

Her: Well you did threaten to fire me if I gained weight

Me: And you threatened to burn my company so am now scared of you

Her: I also miss fighting with you

Me: You always know how to brighten my day Her: I

also know how to ruin it

Me: True! 😊

Her: So how are things going there? Me:

Well...

Her: You'll explain when you get here? Me: Yes!

Her: Ok then

Me: Take care of yourself for me Her:

Always

Me: Good girl Her: Kuda!

Me: Yes!

Her: I love you!

Me: I love you more!

This is the first time she's told me she loves me. She sure knows how to make my day now that's a keeper.

[16/02, 18:55] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 29

*** Anele ***

It's been 2 weeks now and Kuda still isn't back from South Africa and I miss him. He doesn't want to tell me wants going on but whatever it is am sure he's handling it.

(Phone rings) It's Ria she's Kuda's secretary from the Fashion Company

Me: Hey Ria!

Her: Morning ma'am how are you

Me: For the one hundred time I prefer my name

Her: Yes! Anele there's a slight problem and we need you ASAP

Me: What happened?

Her: Someone is here for you.

Me: Who and what does the person want from me?

Her: I think it'll be best if you came and heard it directly from him

Me: Is it that bad? Her: Kind of

Me: Ok am on my way Her: Ok!

I rushed to my mother's room to tell her that I'll be going out and I found her all dressed up and she's transformed I mean I've only been with her for 2 week but she's glowing. She actually looks happy!

"Looking good mum" I smiled

"Hey Anele! Do you think this dress suits me" she asked

"Yeah you look gorgeous. Going somewhere?"

"Yes I have a date" she answered "A date 🤔"

"Why do you sound so shocked" she asked looking at herself in the mirror

"A date 😊 You're old mum"

"Am just 38 hawu" she answered to think of it she's just 7 years older than Kuda.

"That's still old and its awkward coming from you but enjoy your date"

"I will" she smiled

"Anyway I have to get to the office, one of the drivers will drive you to wherever your date is"

"Ok mntanami (my child) see you tomorrow" she said

"You not even coming back?"

"Anele I have a life" she said

"You mean you had a boyfriend all along?" "Yes!"

She answered

"And am only finding out now?"

"So you wanted me to tell you that I have a boyfriend" she asked

"Not really but I wanted you to tell me that you found me a new daddy"

"Yooh! You really have grown the Anele I know would have lost it. But mntanami you used to be bitter why?" she said

"Love has changed me mum I think that's what was lacking in my life"

"But I loved you with my all Anele" she said

"Am not saying you didn't but I think I was angry at dad for leaving me that I ended up taking it out on people"

"Did you forgive him" she asked "I forgave

all of you"

"I love you mntanami always know that" she hugged me "I love you too mum!"

"Hayi Anele see now you making me ruin my make-up" she chuckled

"You look great even without makeup"

"Of course where do you think you got your beauty from" she laughed

"Maybe from my dad"

"Let's agree to disagree" she said

"I just hate him mum but dad is one handsome man"

"Yeah he is" she smiled

"But nothing compared to my husband👹" "So have you slept with him" she asked "Mum!"

"What? It's nothing to be ashamed of after all I never thought you about that stuff" she said

"Am not having this conversation with you" "Come on Anele am your mother" she said

"Exactly! The fact that you my mother is the reason why I don't want to talk about it with you"

"Then how did you learn about that" she asked

"Mum! Let me get to work before this conversation becomes awkward"

"Ok see you!" She said as I closed the door then drove to the office. I wonder what's so important because Ria never calls me, she doesn't even like me.

My phone buzzed and it was Kuda.

Me: Hey husband!

Him: Why won't you let your driver and bodyguards do their jobs?

Me: 😊 because I can drive myself and I sure don't need no bodyguards.

Him: Where are you rushing to? Me: Again

with keeping tabs on me Him: Am just making sure you're ok

Me: No you just checking if am not doing anything shady and I hate it

Him: No! That's not it Me: Then

what?

Him: It's for your safety

Me: Safety from what? What could harm me?

Him: Am sorry!

Me: I have something I need to take care of can I call you back.

Him: Ok can you...

Me: Bye Kuda see you when you come back.

Knowing Kuda he's about to start lecturing me like I don't have a brain of my own. I wonder what's stopping him from coming back because he said he'll be gone for a few days. I passed by the reception heading straight to the offices passing by Ria's desk who was gossiping as usual. Then I got to the office and found Andile sitting on the chair like he owns the place, well he does but that's not the point and he was with someone that looked like a lawyer judging with what he was wearing.

"Good morning Miss Anele" he smiled "What are you doing here" I asked

"I own the place and why aren't you at work?" He asked ♀♀ he's my boss by the way.

"I don't have any shoots today"

"Ok I was looking at your file and you underage sweetheart" he said

"Wow for real? I didn't know that 😊" I rolled my eyes

"Am serious Anele you're supposed to be at school and not working? You working for us could get us sued" he said and why is he mentioning this now, he knew I was underage when he hired me.

"Well am waiting for my O'level results" I answered "Is it true you're married" the lawyer asked

"What does that have to do with all this? And who are you"

"My name is Takudzwa Nyoni am the company lawyer" he answered as he reached out for a handshake

"What does me being underage have to do with all this and why are you are you two discussing me?"

"According to the law you can only get married when you're 18 and your husband could go to jail for that" Takudzwa answered

"Really Andile? Are you doing all this to get my attention" I asked

"I just want what's best for you" he answered "By ruining things for me?"

"Did you by any chance get forced into marriage" Takudzwa asked

"No! And stop asking me about my marriage" "We can help you Anele" said Takudzwa

"I don't need help am fine and Andile if you know what's good for you stay out of my business" I said

"Can you please excuse us" Andile said to Takudzwa and he left the room

"What are you trying to prove?"

"Why are you flushing your dreams down the drain like that? Do you want to be a housewife your whole life? Do you know that soon Kuda is going to get tired of you and who knows maybe his parents might marry another wife for him" he said

"Am not a housewife he lets me do what I want and he said I can continue with my studies"

"Wait till he gets you pregnant. You'll be just like all his other wives" he said

"What do you want?"

"I don't want anything am just saying don't throw your future down the drain over a man. First of all ask yourself this. Do you really want to spend the rest of your life with him" he said

"Please! You just want me to leave Kuda so I can be with you"

"Well at least am not 15 years older than you" he answered

"Am not leaving Kuda!"

"Then you're going to watch him go to jail" he said

"You're not going to report him are you?"

"If you leave him I won't. Think of all those years he might spend in jail if the police arrested him" he laughed

"He's your friend! Why do you hate him so much?"

"He took something that was dear to me and am going to do the same" he answered

"So you using me?"

"No! I love you and I'll be doing you a favour by separating you two" he answered

"You're sick!"

"It's your choice princess, it's other you leave him or he goes to jail" he said as he kissed me on the forehead

"Don't touch me! Am not scared of your threats Andile" I said then he called Takudzwa back in

"I'd like to report a..." Then I stopped him before he could finish

"Sorry Mr Nyoni but can you excuse us. Please!" "I'll

be outside" he said leaving the room

"What do you want?" I asked "I want you!"

"Andile bantu. I don't even like you" I said

"Well you didn't like him either but if you give me the chance I can prove myself to you"

"No!" I said with tears running down my cheeks

"It's either that or your husband does life in prison for rape"

"He didn't rape me" I cried "What's the difference?" "You're also older" I said

"Am 27"

"Still old" I said

"Like I said, you have a week" he said leaving the room

[17/02, 14:48] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 30

*** Anele ***

Just when I thought everything was going great♀ everything went buzzard. I just don't understand why I have to be in the middle of Kuda and Andile's fights because from the looks of it there's more to the story this goes way before I was even in the picture. I was just sitting on the chair twirling around thinking about what Andile said. Is he

blabbing? Or does he really mean business. Is he that cruel that he'd get his friend arrested or he's just trying to get me scared? Ria enters the room she pushes her glasses in before talking...

"Hey Anele!" She said "Hie!"

"Mr Johnston (Andile) is calling you" she said well Andile is coloured, being cruel doesn't even suit him.

"What does he want♀?"

"I don't know but he's in the boardroom" she answered

"Why is he back anyway" I mumbled heading out the room. Then I went to the boardroom.

"Here" said Andile as he threw some papers at me

"What is this" I asked

"Give that to your husband"

"Why don't you give him yourself" I asked "Because

you might end up a widow if I do" "You're full of

yourself do you know that" I said

"So I have been told, so did you think about my offer?"

"What do you want from me Andile? If you love me then why won't you let me be happy" I asked

"I told you I want you"

"There's are many women out there why me" I asked

"Because that's what I want"

"I not getting with you, if you want report him! I don't care" I answered

"Do you really mean that? Because from the looks of it you falling for him"

"I won't be blackmailed into loving you. If you want to get Kuda arrested then suit yourself" I said walking away

"Where are you going?" "Home!" I

yelled

"It's not even knocking off time"

"I don't care! Fire me if it bothers you" I said

"Remember you have a week" he called out and I gave him the middle finger. I got into the car and drove back home got into the house threw myself on the couch♀Told myself he's just blabbing he'd never get Kuda arrested. I took the papers that am supposed to give Kuda and read them. Andile was signing everything to Kuda. The restaurants, the fashion industry but on one condition, I was the catch. He had already signed the only thing left is Kuda's signature and he could own everything. One of the guards entered well this one is my driver, the one who never talks.

"Afternoon!" He said "Hie can I help" I

asked

"Yes your husband is trying to call you and he says your phone is not reachable"

"Ummmm am not sure where I put it" I said searching my pockets and looking around

"Do you need help looking for it" he asked

"Yeah!"

"When last did you use it" he asked "On my way to the office"

"Let me check your car" he said going out the minutes later he came back with it

"Thanks!"

"Anytime. Do you need something else" he asked well he has never talked to me for this long

"Am fine" I sighed

"You know we can handle him if he's bothering you"

"Who!" I asked

"Andile! I've seen how he's always bothering you not that I'll be ears dropping or anything"

"And by handle him you mean♀ " I asked

"I mean making him disappear"

"Jesus no!" I said

"Ok if you change your mind you know where to find me"

Thanks care of him? Make him disappear? Yes Andile is a pain in the stomach but am not that cruel. The next morning I woke up in my room but I was certain that I fell asleep on the couch downstairs but then woke up in Kuda's room, well that's where I sleep when I miss him. I walked to the bathroom, took a shower when I came back there was breakfast. I had breakfast then got dressed for work.

"Morning!" Said the driver as he opened the car door for me. I have no idea why out of the blue he wants to talk me because usually he ignores me when I talk to him.

"Hie!" I answered "Where to?"

"The restaurant" I answered "Ok! Am Joe
by the way"

"Ok!" I answered but why is he talking to me♀. He drove me around the whole day although I insisted I was fine, it was a busy day but thank God Andile wasn't there maybe he wasn't kidding about signing over everything to Kuda.

"Afternoon!" Said Joe

"Hey! Did I forget to do something" I asked "No! I brought you lunch"

"Thanks but am not allowed to eat that" I answered, well I have to watch my weight so am not allowed to eat any junk food but sometimes I do.

"Is it part of being a model?" "Sort of" I answered

"Then I don't wish to be a model"

"It's not that hard when you get used to it" I said "Well am sure just this one time won't do any harm"

"Just this once" I said as he handed me a plastic from Nandos.

"Ok let me leave you to it. You not going to throw that away aren't you"

"No😊 I promise am going to eat it" I laughed then the door opened and it was Kuda 😊yay he's back 🙌

"Joe can you excuse us!" He said then Joe left the room.

"Hey! I didn't know you were coming" I said as I went and hugged him.

"You laughing with your driver now" he asked in a firm voice with him back against the door and his hands in his pockets, I was sitting on the table

"No he just brought me lunch"

"Oh so you now buy each other much" he said

"That's not it!"

"Then what Anele" he yelled

"Look I don't know what they did to you in South Africa but don't take your anger out at me"

"Can we just go home" he sighed

"What's going on?" I said getting off the table.

"Nothing let's go!" He said leaving the room, I took my bag and followed him.

What's his problem? First he left saying he'll explain everything when he comes back and now he comes back with an attitude or he's putting in a straight face because he doesn't want me to ask him. We drove in silent, he was driving and I was playing with my phone.

"We are going to your place" said Kuda concentrated on the road it's like he came back different person. Mxm I thought he'd be happy to see me.

"Are you asking me or telling me" I asked

"Figure it out!" He said and I looked at him, this is not the Kuda I know but I see what he's doing, he trying to pick a fight with me but today I'll be the bigger person I'll just keep quiet. I took out my headphones and put them on. We got

home, I got out the car went straight to my room well seems my mom isn't yet back. I got to my room and ran a nice bath for myself. I got out when the water was getting cold wrapped myself in a towel then got out and found Kuda sitting on the bed lost in his thoughts. I went into the closet and put on his t shirt and tights. Then got in bed and hugged him from behind. Am not the begging type but I actually care about this idiot 😊.

"What's wrong and don't you dare say nothing because as you can see my arm are around your neck I can choke you to death" I said

"😊 maybe you should sit In front of me where I can actually see you" he laughed

"Now tell me! What's bothering you?" "Maria gave birth♀" he said

"That's great! What's the gender?" "It's a boy" he answered

"Am sorry! I know how much you've always wanted a male child"

"The baby is mine" he said and it came out as a whisper. I sat up and looked at him.

"Is that why you were in South Africa" I asked

"Yes and I want to be there for my son, he needs to have both his parents around him"

"What are you saying" I asked

"Am saying Maria is moving back in. But it's temporary"

"When did you think about all this" I asked

"While I was back home"

"And when were you planning on telling me" I asked

"I was going to tell you but I found you laughing with Joe"

"Jealousy doesn't suit you plus you're the one who insisted he never leaves my sight" I said

"I didn't say laugh with him"

"Back to your story so in other words Maria is at your house right now" I asked

"Yes and it's our house"

"No it's your house, your wife, your kid. You didn't include me in your plans because if you did you'd have talked to me first" I said

"I was just busy but I was going to tell you"

"Busy my foot! But you have time to call to check if am not doing anything shady" I said

"Anele I have a lot going on right now I don't have the time to fight with you"

"Then go back to your wife and kid who knows what you two were doing in S.A" I yelled and he slapped me

"Am still your husband so respect me" he said and I took a moment then for some reason I slapped back and my hand stung. Then he pinned me down on the bed with hands above my head. And looked me directly in my eyes

"Never in your life hit me back. Do you hear me" he said

"You hit me first" I said trying to break loose

"I want to be mad at you but God you smell great"

"Kuda let go of me" I said

"Or what"

"I'll scream you know my mother is around right" I said

"You wouldn't dare"

"Try me!" I said

"Let's make babies" he whispered

"You're crazy 😊 am still mad" I giggled because he wouldn't stop tickling me

"Am sorry I slapped you"

"Again why we're we fighting" I asked "I have

no idea"

"Well my hand hurts" I sulked

"Saves you right"

"Really now" I said as I took a pillow and hit him with it.

"Don't start what you can't finish"

[18/02, 15:52] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 31

*** Andile ***

I woke up did my morning hygiene took a quick shower headed to the closet and put on my grey suit, brushed my hair. Looked at myself one more time then took my pills before heading downstairs. I found my mother cooking breakfast although I told her not to. She's visiting, it was supposed to be a day but it has turned to weeks not that I hate having her around but the stuff this woman makes me eat 🙄

"Morning!" I said standing by the kitchen door. "Andile you're up! I making your favourite" she smiled

"I'd love to but am late but can you pack a lunch box for me" I said well am not going to eat it I just don't want her to feel bad.

"Andile!"

"Yes!" I answered

"How come you no longer work with Kuda?"

"I opened a construction company and it didn't match with restaurants and fashion" I answered well thank God she knows nothing about that otherwise she'll be asking 21 questions.

"Oh ok tell Kuda to come see me, I haven't seen him in a while"

"He's always busy mum" I answered well I don't want my mother knowing what happened because she's going to try and fix things and I don't want to fix things, I want Anele.

"You two were best friends what happened?"

"We grew up mum now can I go to work" I walked out. I don't know why everyone is asking me that. I got to the office well I didn't lie about owning a construction company. The secretary came in with my coffee with her tight skirt as usual well I only have eyes for one person.

"Morning Mr Johnston" she said

"Hey Lilly, did you call the person I asked you to call?"

"Yes she said she'll be here before 9" she answered

"Ok!" I said then Lilly walked out a couple of minutes later Anele walked in she's really growing it's like she becomes prettier every time I meet her

"You!" She rolled her eyes "Hie to you too Mrs Moyo"

"If I knew it was you I wouldn't have come" he said

"That's why I didn't tell you it was me"

"A woman called" she said "That's Lilly my secretary"

"What do you want" she asked with her arms folded and she looked great in that floral dress

"Take a sit"

"I don't want to sit what do you want" she asked

"Sit down Anele" yelled and she sat down I guess she understands shouting.

"What do you want?"

"Nothing I just wanted to see you" I smiled then walked up to her and sat on the table in front of her but she shifted back.

"Well you've seen me, can I go now" she said as she shifted uncomfortably.

"Don't worry you'll be gone in no time!" I said as I placed my hands on the arms of the chair and pulled her toward me.

"What are you doing?"

"What does it looking like am doing" I said "What do you want from me?"

"I want you" I leaned over and looked at her in the eyes and from the looks of it she's weak

"Andile don't" she said and it came out as a whisper. I didn't even touch her 😊 I was just sniffing her neck because she smells great.

"Do you really want me to stop" I kissed her neck "Yes!" She whispered and am loving how her body is responding to my touch. I pulled her chin up and killed her funny she didn't push me off but she kissed me back.

*** Kudakwashe ***

Maria is driving me nuts she's using the baby to get to me yet I specifically told her that she's staying with me because I don't want my child to grow up without his mother. We named him Kumkani meaning King well my father named him that.

"Where are you going" Maria asked as I opened the door

"I need to get some air Maria! Do I have to report to you when going out" I answered

"In other words you mean you're going to see Anele"

"What is your deal anyway" I asked

"Oh so you're going to leave me alone with your son while you go to Anele"

"What do you have against Anele" I asked "She took my husband from me"

"Did she also tell you to sleep with other men" I asked

"Not fair Kuda you never gave me your attention what did you expect?"

"Then you understand why am giving Anele the attention she deserves" I said

"Fine go to her! I don't care anyway".

"Go breastfeed the baby and stop talking nonsense" I said as I went out then drove to Anele's. She wasn't there but I have

a key so I let myself in. About an hour later she entered, it's like she wasn't expecting to find me home. Her eyes are blood shot like she's been crying

"Hey is everything ok?"

"Yeah am fine why" she asked

"Your eyes are red! Have you been crying?" "No!

My eyes hurt" she answered

"Why are you still standing by the door, come give your husband a hug"

"Uhm am sweaty" she answered

"🤔 really now? That's your excuse?"

"Can you excuse me for a moment" she said as she rushed upstairs and I followed her.

"Did I say something?" "No!" She

answered "Then what's wrong?"

"Nothing" she said as she locked herself in the bathroom, she usually does that if she's angry or something is bothering her.

"Anele talk to me"

"Am fine" she said then I heard the shower running a few minutes later she came out wrapped in a towel then went to

the closet and came out wearing a long sleeved long dress like she's trying to hide something

"Tell me what's bothering you" I said "I

messed up" she cried

"What do you mean?"

"I messed up big time" she cried "Hey!

Don't cry" I hugged her

*** Anele ***

Am so disgusted at myself right now, I shouldn't have gone there in the first place. I could I have been so weak♀. I went to the closet I think this is the 9th time looking at myself in the mirror, my neck is all bruised I have hickies all over and the worst part is that I can't get the image off my mind it's like God is punishing me for what I did. Kuda would kill me if he found out.

"Anele!"

"In the closet" I said as I rushed out.

"Dinner's ready!"

"Am not hungry" I answered "I made your favourite"

"Fine!" I chuckled then we went and had dinner

"What's on your mind?"

"What do you mean" I asked "You're not yourself"

"Am fine just a busy day" I replied "Is that why you were crying?"

"No! That was just me being a cry baby" I answered

"I know you! You don't just cry. What's bothering you?"

"Nothing, now can we eat" I said

"Your O'level results are out"

"Ok I'll check on the internet tomorrow" I said "Or we can check now"

"Ok why don't you check for while I cross my fingers" I said

"Am sure you did great" he chuckled

"I'll check tomorrow because am not sure I want to know right now"

"You know you can always talk to me" he said

"So how's the baby?"

"He's growing but Maria is drinking me crazy" he said

"See why I didn't want to come there"

"Then how are you going to see the baby" he asked

"Fine I'll come for Kumkani of course"

"That would mean a lot" he said the he tried to touch my shoulder but I moved back honestly I don't know why I did that.

"Oky now am getting worried" he said "Am sorry!"

"What's going on with you today? Why won't you let me near you" he asked

"It's nothing"

How do I tell him I slept with his friend 🤔? [18/02,

21:28] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 32

Kuda went back to his house, I don't want to lie I feel awful I want to tell him but am scared he might murder me. Well I need someone to talk to and I know just the person. I asked her to meet me at my place, I sent the driver to go pick her up and gosh she looks different. She's prettier with her nicely braided hair and she's wearing skinny jeans 🙌

"Wow!" I said

"Hey to you too" she hugged me "You look amazing"

"I try" she smiled

"Please take a seat, can I get you anything to drink?"

"Coffee would be great" she answered

"Ok give me a minute" I said heading to the kitchen then I came back with a tray.

"So how's it like being the Prince's only wife" she asked

"Not bad actually!"

"I heard Maria came back, is it true" she asked

"Yeah she has Kuda's son"

"So how do you feel about that" she asked

"Well I have my problems to deal with which is kind of the reason I called you here"

"Ok! What did you do" she asked "I did something very terrible" "Am listening" she said

"I slept with Andile"

"No! Anele why would you do something like that to Kuda" she said

"I know but I don't know what came over me trust me I feel bad as it is"

"Have you told Kuda" she asked "Am scared to tell him!"

"If there's one thing Kuda hates it's being lied to. Tell him before its too late" she said

"He'll kill me♀"

"He won't he loves you" she said "I don't think he will after this" "When did this happen" she asked "Yesterday!"

"So how was it" she laughed "Not funny Chido this is serious"

"Sorry 😊 but tell him the sooner the better well that's if Andile hasn't blabbed to him already" she said

"Yeah will call him"

"Is that a hickey" she answered "Chido cut it out!"

"What! From that looks like you were enjoying" she laughed

"Since when did you become like this not stop joking about that I feel bad as it is"

"I became like this since I left Kuda, I actually found a man who loves me and me alone and proceeding with my studies" she said

"Am happy for you!"

"Am glad Kuda married you because if he didn't I'd still be there playing wife number 3" she said

"You crazy!"

"You thought me that" she said "I missed you" I hugged her

"Let me get going I have class to get to" "Thanks for coming" I said

"Anytime and please don't let him hit you" "Well I kind of deserve it" I said

"Wrong or right he shouldn't hit you"

"Ok bye" I hugged her

"Love you and let's hope you not pregnant" "Go

Chido!" I said well am on the pill.

"Cover those hickies up they'll make him more angry" she laughed ♀ she's not taking me serious. I took my phone and dialled Kuda.

Him: Anele!

Me: Can we talk?

Him: Ok am coming over. Me: Ok

Him: Bye

Am literally shaking and from the looks of it, it's like he's having a bad day because when he answers his phone he usually calls me wife. I waited for him in the dinning pacing up and down. He didn't take time, about 20 minutes max he was already here.

"Afternoon" I said "Hey"

"I want to tell you something"

"What is it" he said as he pulled me to his arms which is making me lay on his chest and making it hard for me to tell him that I messed up.

"Am sorry" I said

"What did you do?" He said as he sat down.

"I did something terrible and I regret it" I said as I wiped the tears off my cheeks. "Uhm I slept with someone and am so sorry" "I know!"

"You know" I asked

"How can I not when you came back all jumpy and bruised"

"Am sorry I didn't mean to" I said

"Who is he?"

"Kuda please!" I whispered

"Is it someone I know" he asked and he was very calm.

"It's Andile!" I said and he went quiet for a moment "Am sorry! Am really sorry" I said.

"Am disappointed Anele!" "And am sorry" I said

"I didn't expect that kind of behaviour from you"

"Are you mad" I asked

"Yes! And disappointed" he said then walked out leaving me crying by myself.

(A week later)

Do you know that one day you just feel low and don't feel like doing anything? This is me today, I just want to be home sleeping but I can't because we preparing for a fashion show and we're behind time then there's this commercial am supposed to do sometimes I prefer my normal life when I went to school, helped my mother at her work place then hang out with my friends whom I haven't talked to in a while because am always busy. My mother went back to Chitungwiza well she said she's not interfering in my business and am alone these days because Kuda is always at his house with his 'son' , and I think he's still mad at me because he hasn't talked to me since I told his about me and Andile and I hate myself every day for that. I have apologised countless times but nothing.

"Anele focus" the photographer yelled bringing me back from my thoughts

"Sorry!" I said

"What is wrong with you today" he shouted 😊

"I said am sorry ok"

"Everyone take 5! Anele come here" he yelled and I walked upto him.

"What!"

"Don't give me attitude Anele you know the deadline is today" he said

"Am sorry it's just that my head is all over the place"

"Get your sh*t together. Okay everyone places" he said as he picked his camera.

"Tom (photographer) can I talk to Anele for a minute" said Raymond

"Just don't take long" he answered

"I didn't know you were in town your Highness" I said to Ray well he's crowned Chief now.

"I wasn't but had to come this side ASAP" "Ok!"

"What's going on" I asked

"Kuda got arrested" "What! Why" I asked

"It's a long story but I'll explain on our way to the police station because you're also needed"

"Tom! Am sorry but I have to go, it's urgent" I called out

"You got to be kidding me!"

"Am sorry but please find a fill in for me" I said as Ray and I rushed out.

"Did he tell you what happened" I asked Ray as we drove to the police station.

"Yes!"

"Are you also mad at me" I asked "It's not my place"

"I swear it just happened, it was just a moment of weakness" I said

"We all have our weaknesses".

"But that doesn't justify what I did" I said

"Don't beat yourself up it was just a mistake" he said.

Ok so Kuda got arrested! Let's hope it's not what I think it is.

[19/02, 16:43] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 33

Raymond and I drove to the police station, we got there and it turns out Kuda beat the living hell out of Andile which led him to getting arrested. I guess this time he couldn't let it slide well I don't blame him. We did a horrible thing and I hate myself for it.

The last time I was in a police station was when my parents were fighting. Raymond was doing all the talking, they asked us to wait a moment. This is all my fault, if I wasn't so weak everything would be fine Kuda wouldn't be in jail right now. I asked for the bathroom since I wouldn't stop crying I needed to wash my face. I looked at myself in the mirror, I can't even recognize myself. Money and fame has changed me, I used to be strong but now am just weak. What happened to the strong Anele who knew what she wants and stood her ground, I took my phone out and checked my O'level results, I passed with 8 B's and C' s. I wouldn't say am happy because I have always been an A student but hey I wrote the tests myself. I wiped the tears off once more but they won't stop, this man has been nothing but kind to me and this is how I thank him, he has shown me what it feels like to be loved but all I do is disrespect him. Yes sometimes he annoys me but I wasn't meeting him half way, my heart is torn right now and I wonder how Kuda feels. I got out and found Ray still waiting.

"Are you ok" he asked "Yeah!" I

sniffed

"Don't beat yourself up, we all make mistakes" he said wiping the tears off my cheeks with his thumb

"I messed up big time!"

"It's ok, everything will be fine" he rubbed my shoulder "It hurts I feel really really bad 😞"

"Please don't cry" he said as he pulled me to his arms. We waited a few minutes then they let Kuda out. He came with some policewoman who was wearing a different uniform from the others ♀.

"Hey are you ok" I said as I hugged Kuda but he didn't hug me back.

"Can we go" said Kuda as he walked away, Ray followed. I get it he's angry but I was worried about him. I was just left standing with the woman.

"Thank you" I said as I was about to walk away "Is he your father?"

"No he's my husband" I chuckled and she laughed then realized I wasn't joking.

"Your husband 😊" "Yes!" I nodded

"How old are you?"

"Turning 17 in 2 months" I answered "Which means you still 16?"

"Correct" I said "Come with me"

"Where to" I asked

"It'll only take a moment" "Ok♀"

I took out my phone and texted Kuda that the police lady wants to talk to me but he did not reply so whatever. I followed the lady and she led me to an office then she gave me water. I sat on the couch then she sat next to me and took my hands.

"My name is Agnes and am from the C.R (Children Rights) organisation. What's your name" he asked.

"Anele Moyo!"

"You said you were married to that man right" she asked

"Yes!"

"Why did you get married at such a young age" she asked and I swallowed hard because I don't have an answer to that.

"Why are you asking me that?"

"Because child marriages are illegal, that man you call your husband could be arrested for being with you" she said

"Please don't arrest him!"

"But it's the law! So do your parents know that you're married" she asked

"Yes my mother organised the whole thing" "Oh so it was an arranged marriage 🙌" she said "Yes!"

"Were you forced to marry that man" she asked "Can I have some more water?"

"Sure!" She said as she stood up and poured me water.

"Thank you!"

"Am sorry for bombarding you with questions but I need to know if you were forced to marry that man" she asked

"I had no choice, our house was going to be evicted and it was the only option"

"Am so sorry" she said "Can I go now?"

"Has he ever abused you" she asked and I had a quick flash back of all the times he hit me.

"No!" I shook my head

"We could help e Anele, we could take you out of that place and you can go back to school, move on with your life. You're still young, our organisation looks out for children like you and it's not fair that you were forced into marriage at your

age. I have a daughter just your age and I wouldn't want that happening to her" she said

"That's would be great but I don't have anywhere to go, he's all I have"

"What about your parents" she asked

"They separated and my mother can't afford to take care of both of us"

"If your mother is unfit to take care of you then we can find you foster parents" she said

"Am fine where I am, it's better than living with strangers"

"You're saying this now but in 3 years' time you'll end up with a baby and that man won't love you the same way he loves you now and you're going to end up miserable your whole life, is that what you want" she asked

"No! Of course not"

"You're still a kid your thinking now is different from your thinking 5 years later. You still have the chance to fix your life. You don't have to be scared to leave him, we help children like you" she said

"You're confusing me"

"It's ok to be confused. You're still a child after all" she chuckled

"So what are you saying?"

"Take my card and go think about it. Do you want to be married at 16 or do you want to do stuff that 16 year old do. Go to school, get a boyfriend, get your heartbroken, go to parties like kids your age not that am saying go wild but do stuff that 16 year olds do" she said

"I'll think about it and then get back at you" "Ok

cutie. Did you write your O'level" she asked

"Yes" I said as I took out my phone and showed her my results and she was heartbroken

"🤔 You're so intelligent Anele you deserve better please do something, you have a bright future" she said

"I should get going, it was nice talking to you" "Anytime!" She hugged me. This lady is so nice she even bought me lunch. Joe (my driver) was with me all the time of course then later he drove me home. Kuda was at his place, I took a quick shower put on Kuda's shirt I love the smell of him cologne. I got under the covers thinking about how my life changed the last 10 months. Do I want to spend the rest of my life with Kuda or do I want to be a 16 year old? My phone buzzed and it was Rutendo, my former classmate who is also my best friend...

Her: Hey girl!

Me: Hie! Long time

Her: Long time in deed. These days you don't like me

Me: I do I've just been busy

Her: Yeah busy smiling for the camera. Girl you look 🔥 I wish I was you.

Me: Trust me you don't, my life isn't as perfect as in the magazine

Her: Trouble in paradise Me: 😊😊 sort

of

Her: Just prepare a nice dinner and go down on your knees trust me he won't stay mad at you Me: You

crazy

Her: Try it and you'll thank me later Me: Fine!

Her: So did you collect your results? Me: I

checked them online

Her: I bet you passed, you were one of our school's best student

Me: What about you?

Her: I managed to get 8 C's well at least my mom is happy

Me: Am happy for you chommie you did well

Her: So we going celebrating tonight do you want to come?

Me: I'd love to but I can't

Her: I know because you married its ok will be sending you the photos

Me: Ok 🤔

Her: Don't be sad! Me: I miss you

Her: Miss you more girlfriend Me: Say hie

to Anita for me.

Her: Yeah about that one, she's married too Me:

What 😬 Why?

Her: She got pregnant and her parents kicked her out-ish.

Me: What do you mean?

Her: Well she kind of ran away you know what the Shona call Kutizira

Me: Why would she do that? Married isn't chocolate and flowers

Her: Well not all of us are lucky Anele, you got forced to marry a man who's rich and someone who loves you. I get it, it's wrong but everything happens for a reason. Look at you now, the best model in the country

Me: Yeah maybe you right, everything does happen for a reason

Her: Not maybe but am right

Me: And she's back 😊 Her: Let me get
going ok Me: Ok take care!

I hung up and silently sobbed trying to picture how my life would be without Kuda in it. Is Agnes right about what she said? Am confused right now, what to do ♀♀

[20/02, 17:10] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 34

I took my time and actually thought about what I want but first I need to get something off my chest. I asked Joe to drive me to Waterfalls, that's where my father lives. I've never been there but he gave me his house number and said I should drop by anytime. I never went there because I didn't want to hurt my mother's feelings since her and dad aren't in speaking terms. Am going to my father's place because I think it's about time I forgive him, I've spent my whole life so

angry at him for something he didn't even do. I got there and a woman opened for me.

"Good afternoon!"

"Hie! Can I help you" she smiled

"My name is Anele Moyo and am looking for Gerald"

"Anele? Wow you've grown! Please come in" she opened the door wide for me. Am even surprised she knows me, we got in and she offered me a seat.

"Gerald!" She yelled

"Hayi! Hayi! Berita why are you why are you yelling" said Gerald as he entered the room.

"Anele's here" Berita said excitedly

"Anele! Come give your father a hug" said Gerald and I slowly walked up to him thinking about all the shit my mother and I have been through because of this man, all the insults♀. On second thought maybe I shouldn't have come here.

"Hello!" I fake smiled

"Can I get you anything to drink" Berita asked

"Water would be fine" I answered.

We actually sat down and talked for the first time in 16 years. Gerald explain everything from the word go and his story and

my mom's don't match at all. These people are actually nice, I don't know why my mother hates them so much or she hated the fact that my father chose his wife over her. They were asking about my life and my marriage which is sour at moment. They also asked about how I did on my O'level. Later I went back home, the house is just quiet and boring♀. Raymond would call to check on me, I guess Kuda is still mad. I sat on the couch thinking about what Agnes said, well it's kind of the only thing that has been on my mind lately. Choosing between being a teenager and playing wife, I compared myself from what I was 10 months ago and what I am right now, a lot has changed, I have changed. I went from strong to weak, from bitter to sweet. My mother once told me ' sometimes we sacrifice our happiness for the ones we love'. I never truly understood that but now I do. Kudakwashe has been nothing but kind to me. He left his wives for me, he went against his parents for me but all I did was hurt him but am going to make things right.

I took a deep breath then entered Thomas's office nervous as hell, am literally shaking because I don't know if am doing the right thing or am going to regret this in the future. Thomas is the photographer and the head of the magazine department.

"What do you want" he asked busy with his computer.

"Can I talk to you for a moment" I said

"Is it a matter of life and death?" "Not really" I said

"Then it's not important!"

"It's important please hear me out first" I replied

"You have 5 minutes" he said still concentrated on the photos he was editing.

"Here" I said handing him an envelope.

"We both know am not going to read that, what it is?"

"It's my resignation letter" I answered

"You're quitting 🤔 why?"

"This isn't me, I never wanted to be a model in the first place" I answered

"You're our best model Anele this is what you were made for even the camera loves you"

"That's what I've decided" I replied "Why the sudden change of mind?"

"I have been thinking like a lot and this is not what I want. I don't want to be a model my whole life" I answered

"You know you have a contract with the company right?"

"About that! I had a 6month contract which expired a month ago and you kept saying you'll renew it so thank you for forgetting to renew it" I smiled

"Is there anything I can do to change your mind?"

"No!" I shook my head

"This place won't be the same without you like literally because you very loud"

"Am going to miss you too" I laughed "So

where to from here?"

"Am continuing with my studies and see where that takes me" I said

"All the best wishes" "Thank you" I

said

Ok that was easier than I imagined. Next stop Kudakwashe let's hope he gives me the chance to explain myself. I called him and asked him to come over and he agreed so fingers crossed. I went back home took a nice relaxing bath.

*** Kudakwashe ***

Nothing breaks a man more than to hear that your wife cheated on you worse with someone you know. When stuff like this happen you start questioning yourself, am I not man enough for her. God knows I tried to keep her happy but it's just not good enough. I love Anele so much that am even scared to be around her because God knows how much pain and anger I have in me. I might end up killing her with my bare hands.

"Kuda are you even listening" Maria asked

"I heard you Maria. What's stopping you from going" I answered

"What is wrong with you these days you all bitter?"

"Am fine" I answered

"Ok then I'll be back in a week"

"I don't care Maria we're not together anymore just don't see your boyfriends with my son" I said

"Not fair Kuda you can't bring that up every time you're angry I get it I messed up. Am human after all"

"Are you done" I asked

"Yooh🙌🙌🙌 this Anele of yours has really messed you up. Am glad we separated because I don't think I could handle this attitude from you" she said as she walked away and she's not wrong that kid really messed me up. I went downstairs and joined Raymond who was watching TV.

"Why are you still here, should be you be in South Africa with your wife" I asked.

"Vele sungicotsha (you're kicking me out)?"

"Why does it seem like you avoiding your wife" I asked

"Nicholine is pregnant again♀ I think she's doing it on purpose so she can abuse me then blame it on the pregnancy"

"Is she trying to have a soccer team or what" I laughed

"And her craving are the worst"

"But she's your wife and you made her pregnant so go back her. I want you gone when I come back" I said

"Where are you going?"

"Anele wants to talk" I answered "Take it easy on her"

"I really want to forgive her but the picture of her and Andile♀" I said

"Ok before you go can give you a piece of advice"

"Advice from you? This I want to hear" I sat sitting back down

"Look I understand you're angry at her and I would too if I was in your situation but remember Anele is just a kid her brain isn't yet mature and she can be manipulated easily"

"That doesn't justify what she did plus I know Anele and she doesn't give in easily" I said

"We all have weak moments, she made a mistake and she regrets it just give her a second chance, she deserves a second chance"

"Maybe" I said

"Stop acting stubborn Kuda you knew what you were getting yourself in when you married a 16 year old"

"In my defence my parents married her" I laughed

"You should have said no it's not like they held you at gun point"

"What are you saying" I asked

"Am saying hear her out first Anele is tough she wouldn't have voluntarily did it"

"Fine I'll hear her out" I said "And don't you dare hit her"

"What do you take me for" I said heading out. I drove into Anele's. I got in and the house was just quiet. As soon as I closed the door the lights dimmed and the music went on, smooth jazz 😊. I looked up and saw her coming down the stairs wearing the same attire she was wearing the day I went to get her from her parents' house. It still fits it's just a little tight, that day I never got the chance to actually look at her because I was so angry at my parents. This kid is actually

beautiful. She cleared her throat and snapped me out of my thoughts

"My Prince!" she bowed her head. That's the first 😊.

"Hey!"

"I made dinner" she said in a soft voice she wasn't looking at me like she usually does she was just looking at her feet.

"Are you always this alone" I asked

"Yeah" she nodded then we sat on the table, she dished for me like a proper wife then we ate which was awkward because she was all quite, Anele is a talker but this time she was quiet. We finished eating and she took the plates to the kitchen, I guess she dismissed the helpers today. I went and sat on the couch then she followed, she knelt in front of me.

"I am so sorry. What I did is unforgivable but please am really really sorry. I shouldn't have gone there in the first place and am sorry" she said

"Why did you do it?"

"I was weak and am sorry" she answered but that doesn't answer my question.

"Andile of all the people?"

"I am so sorry and I'd do anything so that you forgive me" she said

"I don't want you to do anything"

"Please forgive me. I know I haven't been the perfect wife but it is going change starting today" she pleaded

"It's ok"

"I'll be the wife you want me to be, I will respect you as my husband please forgive me" she said

"I said I forgive you Anele!" "Just like that" she asked

"Yes😊 how can I stay mad at you after all the effort you went through"

"I know we've lived together for 10 months but I still don't know what you like so I decided to just go with it" she said

"Because you've never asked"

"I'll start asking. I made dinner myself" she said "I liked it but I love the dress more"

"Yeah it's a little tight now, I can hardly breathe in it" she chuckled.

"How about you go slip into something comfortable and I'll find us a movie"

"So you forgive me" she asked "Yes now go change"

[22/02, 15:07] Cathy: *Married at 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 35

*** Kudakwashe ***

I really appreciate that she made an effort to apologize even though I ignored her and pushed her away, she came back anyway. She rushed upstairs and came back wearing my t. shirt 😊 I don't know why she loves wearing my clothes. She then handed me an envelope. I don't know what to ask first, about the t. shirt or about the envelope.

"What's with you and wearing my shirts" I laughed

"In my defence they look great on me than you" she smiled

"Yeah you look great" I said

"I know" she whispered

"So what's in the envelope" I asked "You went to school didn't you?"

"Ok then!" I chuckled as I opened the envelope and it's her resignation letter. She's quitting modelling♂

"Wine" she asked "You resigning?"

"Yes! Do you want some wine" she asked "You know I prefer whiskey!"

"Here you go" she said handing me the glass

"Thanks!"

"Do you want anything else" she asked "Sit down for me moment"

"Okay!" She said as she sat next to me. "Why are you resigning?"

"Because that's what I want" she answered "Are you sure?"

"Yes am going to stay at home and be the first you want me to be" she answered

"But you love modelling?"

"And I love you more" she smiled "You love me?"

"Yes!" She giggled

"You don't know how much that means to me"

"😊 I feel like we never got the chance to actually bond and get to know. My name is Anele Tanaka Moyo and you are" she said as she reached for a hand shake.

"Kudakwashe Diale! Wait your name is Tanaka?" "Yes why?" I asked

"Honestly I didn't know" "You never asked" she said

"So Tanaka! What do you like?"

"What do I like I like a lot of things" she laughed

"Yeah I've noticed. Can I take you out, get to know each other better"

"Are you asking me out on a date" she asked "Yes!"

"Am expensive are you sure can afford me" she said

"Am sure I can handle you 😊"

"Am going to have to think about it" she said

"Well think fast as you can see am not growing any younger"

"😊 tomorrow would be great" she smiled

"Can't wait!" I said as I pulled her to my arms and hugged her.

"Can I taste your whiskey?"

"No?" I replied "Please just a sip"

"No I don't want you getting drunk" I said "Don't be a bore 😊!"

"Do you really want to taste it" I asked "Yes!"

"Okay but just one sip" I said as I handed her the glass.

"Jesus Christ!"

"😂😂Serves you right" I laughed "Does it always taste like that?" "Yes!" I replied

"It tastes awful but makes you want more" "Don't even think about it" I said

"You know I can just go to the kitchen if wanted some"

"Why do you have to be so smart" I laughed

"Oh almost forgot, I checked my results" she said as she handed me her phone. Then went to the kitchen to refill the glass then came back.

"Whoa! You passed! Am so proud of you"

"😊So I was thinking of doing my A' level if it's ok with you of course" she said

"Anything for you!"

"Ok so I'd be home schooling like I did my O' level" she said

"You really thought about this didn't you?"

"Yeah" she nodded

"Ok then Doctor Tanaka" "Don't call me

Tanaka" she said "But I love it"

"Only my grandmother calls me that" she said "Well
your grandmother and I now call you that" "So how's

baby Kumkani" she asked

"He's growing, you should come see him"

"I will and you named him Kumkani it's a dope name" she
said

"Dope?"

"It's a word old people wouldn't know" she laughed

"Did you just call me old?"

"Did I?" she said

"Ok give me back my whiskey it's making you crazy"

"You love me crazy" she smiled

"Yeah true that!"

So she got a little drunk and went wild on me. It was kind of sexy thought. It's nice having to wake up with her in my arms. I got out of bed trying not to wake her up, took a shower then went and prepared her breakfast well it was now 8am and she was still sleeping.

"Anele" I slightly shook her

"Leave me alone Kuda! I never wake you up when sleeping" she said covering her head.

"😊I made breakfast wake up"

"Close the curtains first" she said and I closed them

"Done!"

"Now this I could get used to" she smiled "For you I'd do it every morning"

"My head is killing me" she sulked "You should stay away from alcohol"

"It's not for persons under the age of 18 after all" she said

"You're the one who asked for it"

"And you gave to me" she yawned "Eat up I'll

go get you pain killers" "Okay!" She said

"So I was thinking, how about we invite both our families for dinner sometime" I said as I handed her the tablets

"My parents in the same room, this I got to see"

"Come on am sure it's not that bad after all they have both moved on" I said

"Ok I'll invite them" "Okay eat up" I

said

"I didn't know you can cook" "What do you

take me for" I said "A 31 year old" she

giggled

"You really like pointing out that am older than you don't you?"

"But you don't look 31" she said "Because men

don't grow old 😊"

"Please! I didn't Science, that B isn't for decorating my certificate" she said

"I got one smart add wife" I said as I kissed her forehead

"Thank you for the food. Am going to go back to sleep. Wake me up in an hour" she said as she handed me the tray

"Ok am going to go out for a minute"

"Ok then wake me up when you come back" she said

"Ok" I kissed her cheek

*** Anele ***

I woke up and there was a note next to me. I checked the time and it was now 1pm♀. The note read:

You were sleeping peacefully and I didn't want to disturb you. See you tonight, Joe will drive you.

Love♥Kuda

I got out of bed and went to the closet to find something to wear tonight. I can't seem to find the perfect dress to wear 😞 and it's too late to go shopping now♀. There was a door bell so I had to rush downstairs since I dismissed the workers for the weekend.

"Delivery for Ms Moyo" said the woman

"Thank you" I said as I handed her pen back. It was flowers and a dress with a note on it.

Beautiful flowers for a beautiful lady. And the dress is so that you don't be late trying to find something to wear, plus it matches my suit.

P.S: 7 o'clock sharp

I checked the time and it was now 4pm 🙌 is it me or time is moving a little faster today. I then rushed to my bedroom and took a bath. Then put on the long strapless cherry dress that Kuda bought, I have noticed he loves the colour. The dress was long and it had a huge vent on the side that was revealing my legs. I put on a little make up and cherry lipstick, tied my hair into a bun and put on black heels. I looked at myself in the mirror, is this really me? The doorbell rang and I took my clutch bag and phone then rushed downstairs. Am sure that's Joe since it's already half 6. I opened the door and it was Kuda and my dress really matched his suit.

"You look gorgeous" he said as he kissed me on the forehead.

"Thank you! You look great also" I said

"Shall we?"

"We shall" I said as he placed his hand on my waist leading me out. Opened the car door then entered. Joe was driving.

"I thought you said I'm going to meet you there" I asked

"I wanted to pick you up myself"

"Sweet♥So where are we going" I asked as I fixed his tie a little

"It's a surprise" he whispered in my ear. "Can't wait!" I smiled

[24/02, 15:31] Cathy: *Married @t 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 36

Finally we got to this mysterious place after what seemed like forever.

"Patience woman, we've only been driving for about half an hour" said Kuda as he opened the car door for me

"In my defence half an hour is a lot of time, one could do a lot in 30 minutes" I answered

"Really? Like what?"

"You know I could..... I could " I stammered.

"We could make babies" he whispered as he pulled me to his arms and planted a kiss on my lips.

"5 more years"

"Yoooh I'll be 36 by then" he laughed as he opened the restaurant door for me.

"What's wrong with that?"

"So you want me to go to my daughter's graduation on a can" he said

"Daughter?"

"Yes I want a daughter from you" he said "We'll

see about that!"

The place is so amazing but its empty just us and people who looked like the staff. There was a table just in the middle of the room, it was nicely decorated. I couldn't help but smile, I didn't know this old man can be so romantic.

"This place is beautiful" I said as he pulled out a chair for me

"Just like you" he said as he kissed my forehead before sitting down, I guess I'll be getting a lot of those today.

"So what are we eating?"

"😊you really are a 16 year old" he laughed

"Why do you say that?"

"Nothing what do you want to eat" he asked

"Since am no longer a model am craving pap and beef stew but it's not the menu"

"It is it just has a different name" he said

"I don't understand why they feel the need to confuse us by using fancy names the should put something like mashakada and mangqina in the menu"

"I don't even know what that is" he said

"Mangqina it's zondo in shona"

"Oh that! So what are we having" he asked

"Spaghetti Bolognese"

"Is it negotiable" he asked "No!"

"Yoooh the things you make me eat" he lifted his hands in surrender.

"You look handsome today" I said well this old men isn't that bad

"I always look handsome" "Don't flatter

yourself" I laughed

"Do you have to be a straight talker?" "Sorry" I

said

"I want a car"

"You're kidding right" I asked

"You want me to forgive you don't you"

"Wait! Is this payback for making you buy me a house" I asked

"😊 Yes!"

"Not fair!" I said

We had dinner over light conversation and it was nice spending time just the two of us. We drove back with me wearing his jacket and laying my head on his shoulders.

"Dinner was lovely" I said "Am glad you loved it"

"How do you know that place it's so beautiful" I said

"It's new it's not yet open"

"That explains why we were the only people there" I said

"Well I know people who know people"

"Of course you do" I said as we got out the car then into the house. I removed my shoes and threw myself on the couch, I wish it could always be like that all the time. Kuda then disappeared to the study so I rushed upstairs and slipped into something more comfortable well I wasn't wearing his t-shirt

this time. Then went to the study and found him busy with some papers.

"Hey!" I said

"Hie! Give me 5 minutes and I'll be done" he answered

"What's that?"

"Nothing! Important but I need you to sign something" he said

"Am going to have to read it first" "You'll

read it later" he said

"I could be signing a death sentence so no I have to read it first"

"Do you have to be so smart" he asked as he handed me the papers. And it was a document more like a contract making me their permanent model and another one was of a restaurant, he was signing it in my name.

"I can't accept this" I said as I gave it back to him

"Why not?"

"First I told you I don't want to be a model anymore, I want to be your wife and second it's enough that you bought me a house and now the restaurant. No that's too much" I said

"I don't want you to quit modelling because of me"

"Am not quitting because of you. Am quitting because I want to. Am going to my role as your wife, carry your kids" I said

"You're still young for that how about you do modelling for now then in a year's time, you can do what you want"

"Why do I feel like you trying to keep me occupied. Like trying to get rid of me" I asked

"No! Of course not I just don't want you changing because of me. I love the feisty Anele, that's who I fell in love with even though sometimes you annoy the shit out of me but I love you like that"

"Fine I'll take the restaurant on one condition" I said

"And what is that?"

"Let me buy it" I said

"It costs a lot of money" "How much" I

asked

"6 million" "Yoooh" I gasped

"So are you going to take it or what?" "No! I

don't like hand outs" I said

"Fine how about you come back and work for me as a model then the money you earn will be used to pay the restaurant"

"Why are you so bent on getting me back to work" I asked

"Because we need you and you were our best model. We have a shoot in 3 days and everything is a mess"

"Maybe if you ask me nicely I might agree" I said folding my arms. He knelt down In front of me

"MaMoyo, Madhewa, mavula malanda, ogeza ngochago. Please!"

"Stop! I'll do it ok you can stand up now" I laughed "I can keep going if you want"

"No need, I'll be at work tomorrow" I said

"Thank you" he hugged me. I inhaled his cologne which drives me crazy all the time.

"And read your contract correctly it doesn't allow you to get pregnant"

"So if I get pregnant I lose my job" I asked. "Yes!"

"Then am definitely getting pregnant" I laughed.

"I don't want to ruin your future. Finish your A' level first then we'll take it from there" he said

"You are the best" I said as I got on my toes and pecked his lips. He picked me up and placed me on the table and kissed the living hell out of me but his phone had to disturb us. He cursed picking it up and I just laughed.

Him: What now? I thought you said you were going to your mother's?..... Really that's your excuse? Of course am with Anele..... Now?..... You know I can't. Fine! I'll be there by tomorrow.

Then he hung up, sighed before turning to me.

"What's wrong" I asked

"Maria wants something and I have to take it to her"

"It's ok you can go" I said

"Are you going to be fine alone?"

"Yeah I'll be fine. Your son needs you and I think you should go" I said. Do I want him to go? No! But his son matters most.

"Maybe you should come with me"

"No! Maria and I are not the best of friends" I replied

"Please! You'll also get to see Kumkani"

"Fine I'll go change" I said

We went to his house and took whatever Maria wanted well I didn't even care to look. Mind you it's was now 11:46pm. The place was so far we got there a dawn. We then got to some house, Maria was standing outside with the baby in her arms. What is she doing outside by this time? We got out of the car well my feet are killing me, some kid came running I guess

that's his daughter. I thought she was running to her daddy but no she came to me.

"Hie little girl" I said as I lifted her up and she's so heavy

"Hie Anele" she said, oh she knows my name

"Oh how are you? How do you know my name when I don't know yours?"

"My mother talks about you all the " Before she could finish Maria interrupted her.

"Go back inside Kelly" she shouted and Kelly held on me tight

"I want to go with Anele" she said

"First it was my husband and now my Daughter" Maria clucked yooh 🙌🙌🙌 I bet she's saying all this because Kuda is inside talking to her mother. I put Kelly down and knelt In front of her

"Why don't you listen to your mother and go inside" I said

"You're going to come get me right?"

"Yes nana! Now go inside" I said then she ran inside

"Hie to you too Maria" I said

"I see Kuda is taking good care of you. You're even gaining weight" she said

"We could say that!"

"I don't know what you did to him but soon that muti is going to wear off and he'll..." Before she could finish I had already slapped her, well am not about to let her insult. On the other hand she could actually beat the shit out me judging by her size. Thank God she was holding the baby because I could be history as we speak. I left her yelling and got into the car. Kuda came out and tried calming her down but we all know Maria. Her mother came and can be very took her inside. Kuda got into the car and just shook his head before driving off which was a long trip we stopped by some hotel and bathed well and Kuda got us some clean clothes, I was still angry. We got home (his place)he got out the car and when I tried to get out he locked the doors using the car key then walked to the passenger's side and opened the door for me well am not in the mood anymore. We got inside the house and found Raymond sitting on the couch watching TV.

"Hie wife" he said as he stood up to hug me "Hey!"

"She's angry" said Kuda passing by and I gave him a death stare.

"What happened makoti? What did Kuda do? Remember I can sort him out for you" said Raymond

"In my defence I wasn't even near the crime scene" Kuda laughed

"What happened" Ray asked

"Well your wife here slapped Maria" said Kuda

"Hawu makoti 😊 sutshaya abantu (you beating people now)"
Ray laughed

"She insulted me" I folded my arms

"What did she say exactly" Kuda asked and they both seem to be enjoying this.

"She said I gave you love potion"

"Well didn't you? Because look at him my brother is so whipped" Ray laughed

"Well if its love potion then I want more" said Kuda

"Not funny!"

"Look Anele don't be offended, Maria was trying to get to you don't mind her ok" said Ray and I nodded

"Ok now go make your husband some coffee then make put some more of that love potion because I think it's fading" said Kuda and I slightly hit his shoulder on my way to the kitchen.

[24/02, 18:21] Cathy: *Married @t 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 37

*** Andile ***

I got discharged from the hospital something like 5 days ago and am better now Kuda really messed me up well maybe I deserved. I have healed now just left with a broken arm, they removing the plaster in a few days. My mother says I have a 'problem' she even booked me sessions with a Psychologist. I don't want to go because I feel perfectly fine but I don't want to hurt her feelings so I'll go and I know that woman thinks am crazy she just doesn't want to say it in my face. Today is my first day going there, I got in and sat on the couch and judging but her appearance she's not that old maybe in here early thirties. She also has beautiful legs🙄

"Morning Mr Johnston" she said keeping a straight face and it's not doing her any justice.

"Hie Mrs?" I said reaching out for a hand shake

"It's Ms Masango" oh so she's not married, I looked at her finger and I don't see no ring. I took off my jacket and sat comfortable on the couch

"Ok Ms can we get on with it I have places to be" I said

"Ok Mr Johnston do you know why you're here?"

"Call me Andile" I said "Why?"

"Because that's what I prefer" I said as winked at her and she shifted uncomfortably crossing her legs. I can tell from just looking at her that she's that kind of woman. She was literally blushing.

"Ok Andile then"

"Not Andile then just Andile Ms Masango" I said

"Andile! Do you know why you're here?"

"Am here because my mother booked these sessions for me but if it was upto me I'd be at work as we speak" I replied

"Mr Johnston, I mean Andile the key to overcoming a problem is first admitting that you have a problem"

"I don't have a problem Ms Masango but we can do something that we both agree on" I said as I walked up to her and placed my hands on the arms of her chair leaning towards her and she shifted back.

"I would appreciate it if you were to sit down Andile"

"Can you do me a favour" I asked as I got closer to her and I could feel her breath on my face.

"Excuse me!"

"I won't be coming for the sessions so I need you to pretend as if am attending and give feedback that am here" I said

"I can't do that, I could lose my job"

"Not if you play your cards right. Just keep the door locked when it's my time and take it as resting time for you" I said

"Am sorry but I can't do that"

"Not even for a million dollars" I said and she swallowed hard

"Am sorry!"

"3 million" I said and her eyes widened.

"Fine but you'll have to check in and out every day"

"That I can do" I smiled then took out my cheque book and signed 3 million.

"Wow!"

"So do you have a boyfriend" I asked "That's private"

"Come on! We friends now. Am sure you can talk to me" I said

"Am sorry but I don't talk about my private life to my patients"

"Patient? How about friends" I said "Fine!"

Friends then"

Funny how all things are possible when you have money. After our little chat I drove to work with my broken arm of course. Greeted Lily by the reception who's always blushing,

went straight to my office. The last time I was here was when I was with madam Anele, I never knew she was that wild.

"Mr Johnston!" Said Lily bringing me back from my thoughts

"What is it?"

"I brought your coffee sir" she said "Ok

thanks"

"Ok is there anything else sir" she asked "Yeah

you look great"

"Thank you" she said pushing her glasses back. "I

need a favour from you"

"Anything sir" she smiled well I don't mean that kind of favour♂

"I need you to deliver something and I need you to do it personally"

"Ok! What do you want me to deliver" she asked "An apple!"

"An apple🍏do you mind me asking why" she said

"Because an apple is a peace maker"

"Ok then!" She answered

"Good! You'll go after your lunch"

"Ok sir" she said before walking out looking hot as always.

*** Anele ***

"We were just talking Kuda! What's the big deal" I yelled

"It didn't look like that to me" he answered

We are in Kuda's office. Of course we have to be fighting because it has been a week now since we last fought, he's shouting about me talking to one of the male models, his name Jasper and we having this bridal shoot. In my defence we were just talking, am not even into Casper yes he's my age (he's 22) and cute but am married.

"We were just talking Kuda relax" I said as sitting on the chair.

"No flirting with the workers Anele we talked about this" said Kuda

"Yes sir! Can I go now" I stood up and walked to the door.

"Anele!"

"Yes" I answered

"Don't forget about the function we have tonight"

"Ok" I answered

"Am sorry for shouting at you" "Ok" I
replied

"Anele am sorry!"

"You know I hate it when you yell at me" I said

"And am sorry" he walked up to me and hugged me.

"I know I messed up before but I need you to trust me" "I
know and am sorry" he said

"Ok! Let me go I have a shoot in 10" "Is it with
Jasper" he asked

"Really?" I pushed him off me and got out slamming the door
behind me. I walked to the room where we do our shoots.

"Everything ok" Jasper asked

"Yeah am fine" I said as I took a bottle of water.

"Hope I didn't get you in any trouble with the boss?" He said
well most of the people don't know that am the boss's wife
because he treats me like call the other workers.

"You did and I'd appreciate it if you kept your distance. I
don't want any trouble" I said

"I can go apologize on your behalf if you want"

"No need" I said

"Do you want to go out for lunch sometime?" "Not

interested" I answered

"You not even going to think about it?"

"What part of not interested don't you understand" I asked

"Precise! I like that" he said and I just looked at him

"Ok people places we starting in 5" Tom yelled

"I should go change" I said walking away. My head is killing me, I have been like that for 3 days now.

"Hie" said one lady I have never seen before.

"Hey!"

"Are you Anele" she asked "Depends! Who

wants to know?"

"😊 Yeah that's you I remember you from that day from the way you talk" she said

"Have we meet?"

"Yes we have" she smiled "Am lost!"

"Sorry my name is Lilly and I brought you an apple" she said

"From?"

"It's from the love of your life well that's what he said" she smiled

"Ok thanks tell him I said all is forgiven" I said then looked over to Kuda who was talking with Thomas and smiled at him he just winked at me.

"Ok then bye" she said then walked away. My head is killing me. I stood up well the shoot is about to start, the moment I stood up I felt dizzy then blacked out.

[24/02, 22:39] Cathy: *Married @t 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 38

I woke up in a nicely decorated room that smelled weird, I looked around and I was in the hospital with a drip in my lower arm. I sat up, am even wearing those hideous hospital clothes. I stood up and walked across the room well am thirsty, I poured myself a glass of water and gulped it down at once. Am so hungry 😞😞. The door opened and it was Kuda, he was carrying food because the smell of pork ribs had already filled the room.

"Hey you up" he said as he hugged me

"Hie! Am starving" I said as I snatched the plastic bad from his hands, sat on the bed and started eating well I know the food is for me obvious.

"How do you feel" he asked "Am fine!

What happened?"

"You fainted" he replied and I froze, usually in movies when the wife faints it means she's pregnant, maybe am pregnant Lord no! What if it's Andile's?

"I fainted" I said as I stated coughing well choked

"Yeah the doctor said its dehydration and you haven't been resting" he said as he rubbed my back because I was still coughing. Well at least am not pregnant plus am on the pill so am safe.

"Yeah we've been busy with the shoots that I hardly rested"

"I think you should take a week off" he said

"No am fine now, I have rested and am good to go"

"Am telling you this as your boss and your husband" he said

"Plus we have that a dinner party"

"That was yesterday, you were out for 16 hours" he replied

"Then there's a party at Mr Kim's today"

"No Anele you need to rest" he said

"I'll go tonight then I take my one week off" "Plus the doctor hasn't discharged you" he said "But you can talk to him. Please I hate it here" "You know I can't do that" he said

"Please do it for me" I wiped my hands and got off the bed. Got on my toes and wrapped my arms his neck

"What do you want Anele?"

"I want you to talk to the doctor for me so he can discharge me" I said kissing his neck

"Not fair!"

"So! Are you going to do it" I asked well I know my husband and I know his weakness

"Fine! Now stop teasing me"

"You know we can always finish this at home" I whispered

"Give me a minute" he said walking out and I just laughed. I went back to eating then the door opened it was Jasper and he had get well balloons in his hands.

"Awwww is that for me" I asked "Yes!" He

smiled as walked upto me "Thanks you

shouldn't have"

"I wanted to, How are you" he asked "Am fine and you!"

"Am very fine! See I snuck out at work let me get going before the boss that's looking for me" he said

"Ok and thank you for the balloons"

"Oh almost forgot this came for you" he said pulling out a box of chocolates and where was he hiding them.

"From?"

"I don't know but the delivery guy said they are for you" he said

"Ok then"

"Bye looking forward to seeing you at work" he said before walking out. Who could sent me chocolates? Kuda walked in while I still had the chocolates in my hands.

"You got chocolates and balloons" he said and I just looked aside.

"Who are they from" he asked in a firm voice.

"The balloons are from Jasper and the chocolates I don't know"

"Oh, get changed" he said as he threw a bag.

"Ok" I got out of bed and picked up the bag, he took about a pen and popped all the balloons.

"Jealousy doesn't suit you" I laughed heading to the bathroom.

"Am eating your chocolates" he called out. I opened the bag and it had his t shirt and tights.

"So you couldn't find any proper clothes" I asked as I got out.

"You look good in my t-shirts plus that way no one can see your killer body we don't want the patients falling for you"

"Can we go and stop eating my chocolates" I said "Let me hold the bag"

We went to the doctor's office and he took my blood sample and did a pregnancy test thank God am clean. We then signed my discharge papers and went home (my place)

"Home sweet home!" I said as we got in. "Your house is so quiet" said Kuda

"Yeah it needs a kid running around" I said "You mentioning the kid thing a lot these days"

"I want us to have a kid of our own and it's not a thing" I replied

"One more year sweetheart"

"Why do I get a feeling you don't want to have kids with me" I asked

"You know that's not true"

"Whatever" I said heading upstairs and he followed me.

"Come on Anele you know that's not true"

"Then what? I told you I was ready Kuda. We know you've always wanted a kid with me from the word go" I said

"A kid is a huge responsibility Anele"

"If I can handle being married to you then I can definitely handle a child" I said

"You are a child yourself and right now I need you to focus..."

"Yeah yeah focus on my studies" I said as I got under the covers.

"Anele!"

"Can I at least rest before we go to your stupid dinner party" I said as I covered my head, I hate it when he makes decisions for me, I get it am young but we can at least talk about it. I see he enjoys visiting Maria because she has his son 😊.

*** Kudakwashe ***

Anele is mad at me but her wanting a child is just childish, she's 16 and I don't see why she feels the need to give me child. I want her to finish her A' level first or at least get legal.

I know she's angry but she'll have to get over it. What does she want a child for at her age. Later that day we got ready for the dinner with Mr Kim and other colleagues. I found her fixing her hair in front of the mirror, she knows how to dress up for an event well she is a model after all. I hug her from behind and I could tell she's still angry.

"Please don't be mad" I said. "Am not mad!"

"You can't even fake it" I said as I kissed her shoulders

"Fine I'll finish my A' level first"

"You changed your mind already? I was ready to give you the baby you crying for" I said as I tickled her a little.

"Whatever!"

"You think am joking" I said and I unzipped her dress

"Kuda!"

"What" I asked

"Zip my dress up before I fight you in this closet"

"What's with you and fighting these days" I said as I zipper her up.

"You're the one who loves picking on me"

"I love you MaMoyo" I said as she turned and looked at me

"Do we always have to wear matching outfits?" "We are a couple aren't we" I asked

"Can we go already?"

"You didn't say you love me back" I said "Really"

"Oh you want to play like that" I said as I tickled her "Ok

I love you! I love you!" She giggled

"Am sorry what was that?" "I said I love you" she giggled

We then went to this function, I swear if it was up to me I was going to stay at home and watch movies with my wife but hey we have to keep our customers happy. My wife is just gorgeous, I couldn't stop staring at her. She caught me staring at her and she blew me a kiss from across the room. Out of the blue a woman came and hugged me.

"Oh my God Kuda is this really you" she said and it was Candice, my first love, my first kiss well Candice was that one girl I fell in love with and she had to leave the country because she got a scholarship in China. She's that one ex who knows you inside out, the one you have a weak spot for.

"Hey!" I said

"Look at you looking like a snack"

"I try and you look gorgeous" I said then looked over at Anele whose smile just faded.

"Well you know me. So where's your wife because I see no ring?"

"Well you're not wearing one either" I said

"Well I was waiting for Mr Right" she said touching my shoulder well that's the thing with Candice, she's too touchy. I looked around trying to find Anele but she was nowhere to be seen. I took out my phone and called her.

Me: Where are you?

Her: Am not about to watch you flirt with some woman in front of me.

Me: Stop being dramatic Anele! Where the hell are you?

Her: Am sitting outside and don't yell at me.

Me: Outside where?

Her: Am looking at you Kuda!

I looked around and saw her sitting outside the restaurant by the steps just as I was about to walk up to her Candice came out and stood in front of me blocking my way.

"I am so cold" she said

"Am in a hurry Candice can I talk to you later"

"Can you at least give me your jacket" she said and from the looks of it she's cold, well I am a gentleman I took it off and handed it to her then looked at where Anele was and she was no longer there. I tried looking for her but she was nowhere to be found, I tried calling her but her phone was off.

[25/02, 16:27] Cathy: *Married @t 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 39

Am not about to watch him flirt with another woman in front of me. He even has the nerve to give her his jacket in front of me, hello am also cold. He was the one who always got jealous when I talked with other models and now he's all smiles with some beautiful woman I have never met. Am I jealous? Yes! Am so jealous right now, he should at least respect that am around, the moment he gave that lady his jacket I just couldn't. Knowing myself somebody was going to end up with a broken nose, instead I called a cab because I don't want to cause a scene and embarrassing him in front of

his colleagues. I switched off my phone because I have to choice of words when am angry. The cab dropped me off at my place and I got in and took the dress that I was wearing and put on my P.J's and I sweater well it's a little cold, then poured myself a glass or whiskey because am about to lose it, I know alcohol and I aren't the best of friends but whatever. How dare he?

"Anele don't flirt with the workers, my foot" I said to myself as I gulped down whiskey and poured another one. Maybe I should have flirted with Jasper or he was doing that to get back at me because no sin goes unpunished with Kuda. The door opened and it was Kuda, I just looked at him and didn't say anything. He snatched the glass from my hands and placed it on the table next to my phone. Sat on the table, picked my phone and switched it on, I noticed he didn't have his jacket I bet he left it with that lady.

"Do you know how worried I was?" Said Kuda in a firm voice as he threw my phone at me. I didn't say a word I just took my phone and folded my arms.

"That woman is nothing but an old friend stop making a big deal out of nothing" he said

"Oh I didn't know you get touchy with all your friends"

"Stop being childish Anele" he said

"Am being childish? Am being childish Kuda! Just yesterday you didn't want me talking to other models. So it's fine when you do it?"

"I didn't even do anything" he said "Really?"

Where's your jacket?"

"With Candice" he said in a soft voice

"So her name is Candice. You know what Kuda do what you want I don't care" I said as I stood up

"Do what? What do I have to do to prove that you're the only woman in my life?"

"For starters stop giving other women your jacket, how does that make me look in front of your friends" I said

"What was I supposed to do? Let her freeze"

"Yes! I was cold but you didn't offer to give me your jacket did you?" I said

"Anele you're just making a big deal out of nothing"

"If it's nothing then why were you blowing up my phone" I asked

"Stop being childish"

"Again calling me childish it's clear you'll never see me as your equal" I said

"What do you want from me?"

"What do I want from you? Really now?"

"You being my only wife doesn't prove to you that I love you?"

"Please! Don't act as if you're the one who's made sacrifices in this relationship" I said

"It's clear you're looking for a fight"

"Of course Anele is the immature one, Anele is childish. Well am sick" I yelled

"Enough Anele! What have you brought in this marriage besides stress?"

"Kuda I had the opportunity to get out of this marriage but I chose you and I didn't sleep with Andile voluntarily, I did it because he threatened to get you arrested mxm " I said as I stood up and rushed to the bedroom locking the door behind me. I swear I never wanted to tell him that but he pushed me to the limit. I just lay in bed and cried myself to sleep well I think the alcohol is making me think more the thought of Andile touching me. I woke up the next morning with a headache, took a shower then headed downstairs. No sign of Kuda thank God. There was breakfast on the table and a *Am sorry* note well if I wasn't hungry I was going to throw it away. At least I won't be going to work since am on my 1 week leave.

I took my phone and switched it on, watched the messages as they blew up my phone. I finished breakfast then waited for my teachers since I now home school. I know I promised Kuda that I'll be submissive but sometimes he pushes me to

the limit, I know what I said last night might have bruised him so since I have an hour and half until the teacher gets her I decided to bring him an early lunch since I kind of went overboard last night well I have to admit that Candice woman challenges me. I drove to Kuda's office.

"You got to be kidding me" I said to myself as I saw him with that Candice lady laughing like there's no tomorrow well his office is made of glass do you can see from afar, I just turned and left because am about to explode and why have I become so jealous all of a sudden.

"Where are you off to in such a hurry" Jasper asked as he blocked my way

"Home!"

"Are you sick or something" he asked "Am on

leave now get out of my way" "What's

bothering you" he asked "Nothing, are you

hungry?"

"Not really!" He answered

"Well it's your lucky day he's lunch" "You

bought this for me" he asked "Take it before I

change my mind" "Thanks!" He smiled

"Ok bye"

"See you in a week" he said "Ok! Now get out of my way"

"Can I have your number" he asked

"Bye Jasper!" I said as I walked away. What's wrong with this Candice woman doesn't she have a job or something 😊 I drove in circles before going back home, I called my teachers and cancelled for today well am no longer in the mood. I got home and found a car outside♀ I got out of the car, the door was unlocked, and I got inside the house. Looked around but there was no one. Whose car was that then? I put my phone on the table and looked around.

"Hey Wife!" Said a voice and I screamed "Jesus Raymond! Ever heard of calling first?"

"Am sorry I was bored and I decided to visit you" he said

"Shouldn't you be back in South Africa by now?"

"Why does it seem like you and your husband no longer want me here" he said as he sat on the couch doping on beer.

"Well you should be with your wife she needs you now that ever"

"She's driving me crazy" he said

"I wonder what Kuda would do if I was to get pregnant" I whispered

"Am starving what do you have? Because all I could see in the fridge were salads and weird food don't you have any meat?" He said well isn't there food at their place

"I can make something" I said heading to the kitchen and he followed me.

"So why aren't you at work?" "Am on leave" I answered

"It's nice being the boss's wife you can take time off when you feel like"

"Trust me I don't get no special treatment" I said then there was a door bell and Raymond looked at me, am cooking for Christ's sake. I went and opened, it was a delivery this time it was a huge teddy bear like human size and again it wasn't a signed♀.

"Is that from Kuda" Raymond asked

"No! I've been getting gifts but I don't know from who"

"Somebody's got a secret admirer" he said as we went back to the kitchen well who it could be.

"Nah!" I said as I continued chopping the carrots "You know Kuda is going to kill someone" he said. "Don't even mention his name"

"What did he do" he asked and he's eating the carrots that am chopping.

"He was flirting with some woman last night and today when I went to the office he was with her. Again!"

"And you're this calm? If it was Nicholine she'd have burnt down the whole building" he said

"😊I didn't want to cause a scene"

"I can talk to him if you want" he said "Nah I can handle my business"

"Whatever you do just don't pour hot water on him" he laughed

"Why would I do that?"

"I know you Ndebele girls" he said

"I'd never and stop eating the carrots get something from the fridge"

"Just out of curiosity who's the woman, do you by any chance know her" he asked

"Someone named Candice" "Candice 😬"

he said

"Whatever it is I don't want to hear it" I said continuing with cooking.

"If you say so!"

After eating I did the dishes well Raymond doesn't want to leave and I have to keep him company. Kuda came back from work and he was just in time for dinner and that b#tch has the nerve to mark him. Well he had lipstick on his shirt just near the collar I bet he didn't see that. I looked at Ray before walking upto Kuda, I took his brief case and jacket. He tried to kiss me on the cheek but I moved back a little, am keeping it cool because Raymond is around because if he wasn't here God knows what would be happening right now.

[25/02, 23:58] Cathy: *Married @t 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 40

We had dinner like nothing is wrong, Kuda had changed his shirt of course. I acted all cool because I didn't want Raymond knowing our problems but deep down I was fuming. We then chilled out over light conversation, Raymond doesn't stop talking 🙄. We said out goodbyes then went to bed, Raymond was using one of the guestrooms. I took a shower trying to calm myself down, I got out with a towel around my waist, found Kuda under the covers. I ignored him went to the closet and put on my night dress. I got out and wearing a gown on top. I took a pillow from the

bed and threw it on the couch then took the bed cover and slept there.

"Anele!" Kuda called me "Good night!"

I said

"Are you still mad because of what happened last night" he asked and I ignored him.

"Anele am sorry but there's nothing going on between me and Candice"

"Okay!" I said "Please come to bed"

"I don't want to" I answered "Did I do anything?"

"Ask yourself that" I said

"Anele talk to me? What's going on?"

"Kuda when last did you talk to Candice" I asked "Last night at the party"

"Okay" I said, the fact that he's lying makes me angrier. I stood up from the couch and tried to walk to the door but he blocked my way.

"Kuda I don't have the energy to fight with you right now. Please get out of my way"

"Where are you going" he asked "Am going to the kitchen"

"Do I look dumb to you? Where are you going" he asked

"Kuda am tired ok! Am tired of all your shit, God knows I try to be the perfect wife but each and every time you have to push me to the limit"

"Push you to the limit? What are you talking about" he asked

"You were with Candice today weren't you?"

"I wasn't with her Anele I swear" he replied and I just looked at him and shook my head in disbelief, he's looking at me in the eyes and lying to me. I may be young but am no fool.

"Then why does your shirt have lipstick on it?"

"How am I supposed to know that I have lipstick on my shirt" he said

"Impossible🙄" I said as I pushed him out of my way but he harshly pulled me back. I said on the bed and looked at him well am not the crying type and I won't give him the satisfaction.

"What is your problem" he asked well went not yelling today since his brother is in the next room. But from the looks of it he's angry now

"You're my problem Kuda, stop entertaining other woman you hear me."

"What are you talking about" he asked

"You're my husband and mine alone and tell that Candice of yours not to cross parts with me because I will burn her alive if I see her." I clucked then went to his side of the bed and slept. He didn't say a word he just joined me on the bed covering me with the bed sheets. The following morning I woke up at 5 and went to the gym room well I also have one in my house and took out all my frustrations on the punching bag. I can't believe he has the nerve to look at me in the eyes and lie to me. We are supposed to be in this together, he's supposed to treat me as his equal but no am childish and immature in his eyes. Maybe Andile was right he'll move on as soon as he meets someone mature and his age. Why did I have to fall in love with him? I was doing just fine when he was a just a man my mother forced me to marry. I never got to have a boyfriend, he was my first everything. I stopped to catch my breath when my phone buzzed and it was an unknown. The moment I answered the person started singing.

Voice: Happy birthday to you! Happy birthday to you! Happy birthday Anele!

A smile escaped my lips, I can't believe I forgot my own birthday, well how could I not with Kuda stressing me out. If today is my birthday which means it's also my anniversary with Kuda. I cleared my throat because the person was still

singing that's when it ticked, why does it sound like it's Andile's voice.

Me: Am sorry who's this? Voice: It's the

love of your life Me: Andile?

Voice: She knows my voice. How are you? Me:

Please don't ever call me again

I hung up and blocked the number, please don't tell me the chocolates were from him also. I took my bottle of water and walked out went straight to the bedroom. Mr Husband was still sleeping. I took a shower then when I came back he was gone, I put on my pink shorts, and the ones Kuda hates well they still fit just a little tight. I don't care if Raymond is around this is my house in fact he should be in South Africa with his wife. I went downstairs so I could get started on breakfast but breakfast was already made, with a good morning note. Am still mad at him though I sat down and started eating, where the hell are these people. I ate breakfast and then went to wash the dishes I mean seriously who cooks and doesn't wash the dishes well at least there's a dishwasher. Someone hugged me from behind well his cologne sold him out. I wiped my hands with a dish towel and tried to push him off but he held me tighter.

"Let go of me Kuda!"

"I hate it when you ignore me" he said "Just like

I hate it when you lie to me"

"I admit it, I was with Candice yesterday but I didn't realize she left lipstick on my shirt and am sorry" he said

"Whatever!"

"You forgive me right?" He said kissing my shoulders and I turned to face him.

"Well am in a good mood today so am going to let it slid but Candice better not..." He shut me up with a kiss.

"You talk too much" he whispered

"You'll moan her if I see her flirting with you again" "I'll

make sure I deliver the message" he said "Good!"

"Again with your tiny shorts" he said "Leave

my shorts alone!"

"You shouldn't be wearing tiny things with my brother around. I don't want him seeing my stuff" he said

"Am your stuff now?"

"Yes! And I have to thank my parents for marrying you for me. I can't imagine life without you" he said

"You should really thank them"

"Today's our anniversary" he said

"I know! How can I forget when you're such a headache?"

"Oh am a headache now" he asked

"Sometimes!"

"Someone's turning 17 today" he said and I just blushed

"Can't believe we've been together for a year now"

"I know today is your birthday but am sorry I have a business meeting out of town but I promise I will make it upto you" he said

"It's okay!"

"Please don't be sad. I know it's our anniversary but if it wasn't important I was going to postpone" he said

"It's ok Kuda really don't worry about it" I said as he pulled me to him arms and hugged me well I have never celebrated my birthday so it's no big deal but I really wanted to spend the day with him.

"So when are you coming back" I asked "In a day or two"

"When are you leaving" I asked "Now!"

"And when were you planning on telling me" I asked

"I was going to tell you it's just that you were angry at me"

"Ok then" I said

"Am sorry" he hugged me.

*** Kudakwashe ***

"I heard you and Anele arguing last night" said Raymond as we drove off.

"Don't tell me you were ears dropping?"

"I wasn't but you two weren't keeping it down" he said

"Anele just loves making a big deal out of nothing" "Was it about Candice" he asked

"She told you didn't she?"

"Dude you came back with lipstick on your shirt, how can you be so floppy" he said

"I didn't know she left lipstick on me".

"Of course you didn't because she did it on purpose and I suggest you put her in her place before she causes trouble between you and Anele" he said

"I'll talk to her"

"Let me talk to her we both know she can easily manipulate you. She knows you have a weak spot for her and she's going to use that to her advantage" he said

"I hear you Raymond now stop lecturing me"

"Anele is a good girl Kuda and you'll lose her if you do any funny business" he said

"Please don't make me regret letting you come with me"

"Fine I'll keep quiet" he said

"Last night she said I was here and hers alone" I smiled

"That kid really loves you so don't ruin it"

[26/02, 22:30] Cathy: *Married @t 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Chapter 41

*** Kudakwashe ***

Raymond and I went our separate ways well I have something I need to take care of at the office. Jasper entered my office "this kid annoys the shit out of me.

"Am busy Jasper what do you want" I asked before he could say whatever he wants to say.

"I know sir but this is urgent" "Am listening" I said

"Can I take an extra hour for lunch?" "Whatever Jasper just don't be late" I said

"Thank you!" He said as he rushed out. My phone buzzed and it was Ray

Me: Tell me you found it? Him: Am trying my best here

Me: Then why are you calling me?

Him: What's the maximum amount I must use? Me:

Whatever the cost as long as you get it Him: You owe me this one

Me: Just get it ok. And don't call me unless you do

Him: You're so bossy

Me: Bye!

My head is already spinning yet its only 10am. Am sure Anele feels bad wherever she is, I asked my secretary to find her friend Rutendo so that she can keep her company well it wasn't that hard because she's literally tags Anele in all her posts. Thank God she agreed even though my paying for all the expenses, but hey I'd do anything to keep my wife happy. Messages are literally flooding in my phone I think I should get someone to answer my calls 😊 because everyone wants a piece of me today. My phone buzzed and it was Raymond♂

Him: Check your messages please?

Me: Raymond! Am not in the mood for jokes what do you want

Him: I found it, check your messages and tell me if I can buy it

Me: Nah I trust your decision Him: Fine
then!

I hung up and about 5 minutes later a confirmation message came through. \$2500 has been used 🙌🙌🙌 Raymond is trying

to bankrupt me on the other hand Anele hasn't used the card I left her, I guess she hasn't left the house.

The door opened and it was Candice "what is she doing here?"

"Hie" I fake smiled

"Hey you! I was passing by and I thought I should pass by and say hie" she said sitting down

"How are you?"

"Am very fine and I hope am not disturbing" she asked well she is disturbing because am busy.

"Not really!" I fake smiled

"So! Where's the boss lady" she asked.

"Uhm she's at home" I answered and watched her facial expression change, I guess she didn't expect that answer

"I'd like to meet her one day. The lady who stole Kudakwashe Diale's heart" she said

"You'll meet her don't worry"

"Is it true that you once had 3 wives" she asked

"Well it was 4 but am left with one now"

"I guess you must love her if she's the one left out of 4" she said

"I really love her" I answered, can she go already before she starts manipulating me because am still having trouble saying no to her.

"Do you want to get coffee" she asked. No! I don't want coffee.

"Coffee could be lovely" I answered ♂my mind is saying one thing and my mouth is saying another.

"Ok then let's go!"

"Ok" I said as I closed my laptop then texted Raymond.

Me: Help! Candice is here

Him: 😊 Munozivana (am not interfering)

Me: Raymond am begging you. I'll do anything Him:

Fine am on my way send me your location. Me:

Thank you!

Him: Ok but first am buying a suit with your card.

"Kuda!" Candice calls me "Mmmm"

"Where are we going" she asked

"There's a coffee shop just two blocks away" I answered well I can't take her to one of my restaurants, Anele already hates

her. We got there and ordered coffee about 15 minutes later Raymond showed up Thank God.

"Candice!" Said Ray

"Oh my God! Raymond!" Said Candice as she stood up and they hugged then started talking about random things while am cooking a story so I can leave.

"I just got a text from the office and I have to go. Why don't you two catch up" I said

"That's a great idea" Ray said

"See you around Candice" I said as I rushed out before she could even answer. Hectic day! I took out my phone and dialled the 'boss lady' 😊

Her: Hey (yawning)

Me: Don't tell me you're sleeping? Her: I

think I dozed off on the couch Me: You're

breaking my heart here Her: I miss you!

Me: Anele!

Her: I know you have a business meeting out of town but I can't help it.

Me: I promise am going to make it upto you Her:

Ok! So have you left yet?

Me: No am still at the office Her: Ok then

Me: Cheer up it's your birthday Her: Am I

allowed to drink?

Me: Just water Her: Ahh Kuda!

Me: Please Anele? We both know how you get when you get drunk

Her: Ok I won't drink, might as well go to sleep Me:

Am sorry!

Her: It's ok. Hey there's a door bell will call you later

Me: Bye love you Her: Love you too!

She hung up and am sure that's Rutendo at least now she won't be bored.

*** Anele ***

I have had worst birthdays but this one takes the cup. The only thing am getting are presents, card and happy birthday texts but no one cared to actually show up. So much for having friends 😞 Kuda isn't even here am just at home bored with the maid running around, as if they are doing something productive. After talking to Kuda there was a door bell and I rushed to check and it was my home girl Rutendo 😊 she just made my day.

"Happy birthday!" She said with her arms wide open

"Hey girl" I said as I hugged her, she's the last person I expected to see today.

"Don't be sad am here now" she said, Rutendo and I have always been close, even if we were a group of three, Rutendo and I were always like sisters.

"You just made my day" I smiled

"Like I'd leave you hanging on your birthday" she said

"You're the best 😊"

"First we have to toast to you being married for a year and still not pregnant" she said

"You're crazy!"

"Go on, go get shots" she said

"Am not allowed to drink today. Husbands orders"

"Don't let him control you Anele" she said as she rolled her eyes

"He's my husband after all"

"Don't give him the power he'll get used to it. Put your foot down, he should know that Anele doesn't tolerate nonsense" she said

"Yes aunt Rutendo"

"Go change am taking you shopping" she said "You want to take me shopping?"

"Yes! Why do you look surprised" she asked "Can you even afford that?"

"For your birthday I can sacrifice" she smiled

"Thank you!" I hugged her

"Now go change!"

I rushed upstairs and slipped into jeans and a t-shirt well am not in the mood for dressing up. We went shopping and she's leading me to the expensive stores, I don't want to sound rude but a piece of me wants to ask if she can afford to shop in such an expensive store.

"Did you get a blesser or something" I asked

"What? Why?" She said

"Rutendo this store sells expensive cloths" "It

shows how much I love you" she smiled.

"You don't have to buy me an expensive dress I have a lot of dresses at home"

"I want you to wear this one when I take you out for dinner" she said and I laughed thinking she's joking but she's keeping a straight face.

"Ok then let's find a dress" "I also want

one" she said

"You want matching dresses?"

"I don't have your figure ok so no!" she laughed

We got the most beautiful dresses well Rutendo has great taste when it comes to cloths and am still questioning myself about the money she's been spending because we did our hair and nails even bought some food. Well I love my hair natural but I braided it and I look different but in a cute way of course. Kuda has been calling me now and then well I even forgot about him for a second, am having too much fun 😊 Around 1pm we went back home well Rutendo is working with time today something she's never done in her life because she's always late for everything. We got home well Joe was driving us. I threw myself on the couch am tired.

"Do you need a massage" Rutendo asked "Who are you?"

"Do you want a massage on not" she asked "Yeah I could use one"

"Ok let me go drink water then we go" she said heading to the kitchen. The doorbell rang and I went to get it and it was Jasper 😊

"Hie!" I fake smiled, what does he want and most importantly how did he know where I live

"Happy birthday!" He said

"Thank you! How did you know where I live?" "I

have my ways" he smiled

"Jasper you know am married right?"

"You're married 🤔" he said as he almost dropped his jaw on the floor.

"Yeah!"

"How old are you" he asked and I just chuckled well am not saying

"Who are you talking to" Rutendo asked opening the door wide

"Jasper this is Rutendo and Rutendo met Jasper"

"Hie Jasper!" Said Rutendo and I watched her turn pale
"Hey Rutendo nice to meet you" said Jasper as they shook
hands and I watched them doing the staring contest 😊 I
cleared my throat bringing them back to earth. I decided to
leave them talking well they were still by the door then
Rutendo came and joined me In the kitchen but refused to
tell me what they were talking about. Then we went for that
massage 😊 best day ever.

[27/02, 11:56] Cathy: *Married @t 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri *

Chapter 42

*** Anele ***

The massage was relaxing Rutendo was telling me about her
boyfriend, she's a wild one this one. After that went back
home, just when I thought the day was over only to discover
it was just getting started. Rutendo insisted we go to this
dinner even though I told her that we can hang in doors and
watch movies, I went and took a bath while Rutendo bathed

in the guest room then put on the dresses we bought and the dress is gorgeous I won't hate. It's a white dress, revealing but not too much, knee length and it suits me like I was born wearing it. Rutendo helped me with the make well am not a make-up person am used to people fixing me up but I prefer my natural look. I wish Kuda could see me right now, I tried face timing with him but his phone went straight to voicemail.

"My baby looks beautiful" said Rutendo, not to mention am older than her by 8 months.

"I miss my husband"

"Come on Anele don't be like that" she said

"Am sorry today is our anniversary and he's supposed to be here"

"Am sorry but for now you have me so cheer up" she said

"Where are you taking me?"

"We going for dinner" she said

"Hayi🙌 you love attention Rutendo we should have just put on our high waisted shorts and went out for burgers"

"You're a model now so keep up with your status" she said.

"What status?"

"You're a celebrity now" she said

"Am a model not a celebrity"

"Whatever let's go" he said as we headed out

We went out Joe was driving us, he's been taking orders from Rutendo today, this one can be bossy when she wants to 😊 poor Joe. Well he doesn't talk much when around people but he's warming up to me.

"You're one lucky lady chommie" she said "Why say that" I asked

"You have a husband that loves you and a successful career"

"Well I got lucky" I said

"Am happy for you!"

"Thank you" I hugged her, I don't know why she's getting emotional. We got to this place, this isn't a restaurant it's more of a house. I looked at her expecting an explanation but she just smiled. We got out and she was all confident well that's my friend for you. We got in and I got the shock of my life these people planned a surprise party for me 😊 Sweet 😊. Everyone was invited family, friends even colleagues. Well played, I didn't suspect a thing which means Rutendo was bankrupting my husband the whole day 😊. To complete my day Mr husband was there yay he's not out of town.

"Go to your husband" Rutendo whispered to me as I walked to Kuda

"You look amazing, I love the new look" he said as he hugged me

"Well played, I didn't suspect a thing" I said I punched him a little

"That was the plan" he kissed me well am a little shy since we in front of family and friends but he doesn't care.

"Stop! Your parents are around"

"You are my wife aren't you" he laughed "Yeah I am your wife"

"Am sorry for making you miserable the whole day"

"Well you did say you'd make it upto me" I smiled

"Happy anniversary my love!"

"Happy anniversary" I hugged him tighter.

"Can we also hug her Kuda, remember she's also my wife" said Raymond he was with Nicholine

"Hey Ray! Nicholine hie" I said as I hugged her with her belly picking me.

"Happy birthday Anele" said Nicholine "For the record I planned all this" said Ray

"Well thank you!" I smiled and how did all these people get her in such short notice or this was planned. Which also explains why Rutendo wanted me to be on point, we greeted everyone, my parents were also there and Kuda's. Jasper and Thomas were even here, Rutendo was all over Jasper like a rash. Nicholine is growing big, where has she been hiding that bump. I take back what I said this is the best birthday ever. I even got the chance to actually talk to Kuda's parents well I've never been around his father, the man is scary yoooh now I see why Kuda is so scared of him and his mother is keeping a straight face as usual. Well today is my birthday so they'll have to let the dress thing go because it's revealing a lot of skin but what the hell.

"So this is the little girl that's making my son lose his mind" said Mr Diale and I just faked a smile

"Evening!" I said playing with my hands am not even looking at them in the eyes.

"Come here!" He said signalling me to hug him and I did well where I come from its not allowed but what the hell it's my birthday.

"You look beautiful makoti" said mother in law well am old enough to be her granddaughter but Thank you 😊

"Thank ma!" I answered then signalled Rey to save me. And he walked upto us

"Birthday girl" he said as he took my hand and we walked away

"Thanks!"

"Anything for my wife" he said, he calls me wife more than he even calls his wife

"Thank you!"

"Do you love Kuda" he asked "Yes" I

smiled

"Does he treat you well" he asked and what's with the 21 questions.

"Yes! He treats me like a princess"

"That's all I need to know, where is your husband anyway?"

"I don't know he keeps disappearing" I said

"Let me look for him. Are you going to be ok?" "Yeah

am good" I said as I walked to my mother.

"Happy birthday my child" said mum as she hugged me

"Thanks mum!"

"Come to think of it a year ago you can home a school girl and now you the Prince's wife and a famous model" she said, I don't know why people feel the need to emphasize that am a 'famous model'. Am not even famous

"I don't know whether to say thank you or what" I said

"Ma! Can I steal her for a second" said Rutendo as she pulled me by my arm

"Saw you with Jasper" I said "Yeah we

kissed" "Rutendo!" I gasped

"Well he's feeling me and am feeling him so why not"

"You are something" I said

"Well you know me. I seize the moment"

"Where are you taking me" I asked as she was leading me out side, heading to the car.

"You'll find out in a minute" she said as she opened the car door for me

"Okay" I said as she closed the door "Have

fun!" She said

"Am going alone?"

"Yes! Joe will take you "she said, well u don't know where am going but am trusting Rutendo. I try to call Kuda so I can tell him about what Rutendo did but he's not answering♀. We got to this place and the door opened and it was Kuda, how did he even get here, these people and their games🤪.

"Hey!" I said as he helped me out the car "Hey

princess!"

"You disappeared on me" I said

"Well I have my reasons"

"Tonight was great! Thank you" I said as he led me inside

"Tonight is just getting started sweetheart" he said as he opened the door, it's a suit. Nicely decorated all romantic and stuff, I got it and he turned on the fire place because it was a little cold. Then he switched on the music and came back with two glasses of champagne.

"I thought you said no drinking today" I asked

"Well with my permission you can" he smiled as he handed me the glass

"What are we celebrating?"

"We celebrating you turning 17 and our anniversary" he said

"Am sorry I couldn't get you anything"

"Well you can do something for me" he said "What is that?"

"Marry me!" He said "What 🤔"

"Marry me Anele!" he said on one knee and I froze, don't get me wrong I love Kuda but giving me a ring is like he's marking his territory because am not even legal. A wedding is a huge step once am in there's no getting out, I looked at the ring in his hands, and I just froze!

[28/02, 12:00] Cathy: *Married @t 16* By

Cathrine Phiri

Chapter 43

Every girl's dream is to one day marry the man she loves and to me this is it, It came out as a shock because I didn't expect him to propose now, I was expecting him to propose in a year's time when am actually legal. Am scared to yes, what if I change my mind later? What if I we no longer love each by the time we make it official? I took a deep breath and looked at him, he was still on his knees God knows I loves him but then why is it hard to say yes. For some reason a tear escapes my eye 'this is it Anele' a voice inside me says. Am getting engaged 😊 then it kicks in, am not dreaming this is actually happening. The smile on my face widens.

"Yes! Yes I will marry you" I said excitedly "For real?"

"Yes!" Before I could know it he was spinning me around.

"For a second I thought you were going to say no" he said kissing me all over my face

"I love you!"

"No I love you" he said as he kissed me

"How long have you planned this? I mean all of it, my birthday all stuff?"

"Honestly I planned it a week ago" he answered

"So all that time were fighting, you were planning all this?"

"Imagine♂ I think Maria was right you did feed me something because the way I love you 🙌" he said

"How much do you love me?"

"I love you to the moon and back. Are you sure you didn't give me something" he laughed

"Hey" I slightly punched him "Are you hungry?"

"Not really" I shook my head "Good then

let's skip to dessert" "No!" I laughed

"Not even if I persuade you" he said running his fingers on my back.

"Not even if you persuade me" I giggled "Are you sure" he unzipped my dress

"I think I should start wearing wrap over dresses or anything that's hard to take off"

"You know I can always tear that up" he said

"You wouldn't dare" "Wanna see" he
said

"Not with this dress, Rutendo bought it for me"

I woke up the next morning checked my finger and the big rock was there so it wasn't a dream. I looked at Kuda who was slightly snoring, it's kind of cute though. Am so hungry, I head to the kitchen look around and there's nothing to eat, I wonder whose house this is, there's just strawberries and chocolates just light food. I checked around the kitchen and I could only find cornflakes, in the fridge there's just juice, butter and milk. Who lives here? I make myself some cornflakes while sitting on the high chair twirling around well that's me, I do that with all chairs that rotate.

I went back to the bedroom, husband dearest is still sleeping, and this one sleeps like a dead person. I want to take a bath but i don't have my things, I notice a bag next to the inbuilt wardrobe and for some reason I open it and there's some stuff packed, toothbrushes, towels, some lotions and clothes. Then lingerie with a note tapped to it *don't get pregnant* I guess Rutendo packed this. I take a shower then come out, Kuda is still sleeping yoooh 🙌🙌. I take the car keys and head out, I don't even know the place. Thank God you can never go wrong when you have the internet and a GPS. I goggled the nearest supermarket and got some food and some things we might need around the house. I went back then got started on breakfast. I went to the bedroom and Kuda was no

longer in the bed, I heard the shower running. Then it stopped...

"For second I thought you ran away" he said as he came out

"It did cross my mind though" I laughed

"How are you today?" "Happy!" I

smiled

"Now that's music to my ears"

"I made breakfast" I said pointing at the tray

"You're the best" he kissed me on the cheeks.

"Whose house is this?"

"Ours" he answered "Ours?"

"Yeah I bought it about 3 years ago, I only use it when I have meetings this side of the town" he said

"It's nice"

"Of course it is, I bought it and we both know I have great taste when it comes to everything" he said

"Really name one!"

"You!" He winked and I just melted

We spent about 2 days then went back home, everyone had gone back I didn't even get the chance to say goodbye 😞 Rutendo was still there of course bossing people around especially Joe, she doesn't see him.

"Hey!" I said as I entered the room she's using

"You're back" she screamed

"We just got here"

"Details! Details!" She said excitedly "He proposed"

"Wow! Can I see it" she said as she snatched my hand looking at the ring.

"I didn't expect him to propose now"

"Well he loves you then I don't see why not" she said "But we have to wait a year to actually have a wedding"

"Which means you have a year to plan your dream wedding" she said excitedly

"Say it!"

"Say what? I don't have anything to say" she looked away but I know her better

"Fine then Anita will do it"

"Fine! Can I plan your wedding for you" she asked

"As long as you don't try to turn it to your own or bankrupt my husband"

"I'll try, am so happy for you" she hugged me "It feels like a dream"

"Do you want me to pinch you" she asked "😊No!

My engagement made the covers well at least a few people know my real age.

The Prince finally put a ring on it well we'll know how those people are, some of the things were nasty but I don't care. Everything was just perfect 2 months went by and Kuda's birthday is coming which got me stressing because I don't know what to get him because he already has everything. I got out of bed Kuda has already left, I can't believe he didn't wake me up. I checked the time and its 7 yet I start work at 8. I took a quick shower, had cereals then drove to work. I managed to talk Kuda into letting me drive myself. I got to the office well a lot has changed the past 2 months, there are new faces. Jasper quit, he said something about leaving the country well Thomas is still here and in a bad mood as always.

"You're late Anele" Tom said

"Bite me!" I whispered

"Kuda said you should see him when you get here" he said. Then I walked to Kuda's office, he's hardly at the restaurant I guess he likes working near me. He was busy with his laptop.

"You called for me sir!" I said "You're late!"

"The thing is that my husband didn't wake me up but I promise it won't happen again" I said

"Here!" He said as he handed me a document and it's that restaurant I have paid for it but we both know he's doing me a favour.

"Thank you! Even though I didn't fully pay" I said signing and handing the document back to him.

"Who even taught you this signature?" "Leave me alone" I said

"I wish!"

"Can I get back to work" I asked "No! My orders"

"Not fair" I said as I walked to his side of the table

"I think you should wear skirts more!" He said as he pulled me to him lap

"Why skirts?"

"For easy access" he winked

"We at work Kuda!"

"And am the boss" he said

"And am the boss's wife" I smiled and he perked my lips. The door opened and it was Candice 😊 how great for all of us. I tried to stand up but Kuda pulled me back.

"Hie Candice!" Kuda said

"Hey! And hie, I guess this is the wife" she said extending her hand to shake my hand.

"Hie Candice" I said

"Hope am not disturbing" she said and we kept quiet, well she is. Kuda can be rude if he chooses to. On the other hand am trying to get off his lap but he's holding me down. Then he gave Candice the what do you want look 😊.

"I was just passing by, let me go since you're busy with your woman" said Candice as she stood up

"Fiancé! Am his fiancé" I said as I showed her the ring.

"Congratulations" she said but her face says otherwise

"Thank you!" I answered, I was tempted to ask where her husband is but we've already tortured her too much. She left the office, Kuda didn't even walk her out. I couldn't help but laugh

"Not cool Kuda" I said

"We both know you were doing to be mad at me if I entertained her"

"True but you didn't have to be so rude" I said

"Enough about Candice! Where were we?" The door opened and this time it was Gomez, he's Kuda's friend from Australia.

"Don't you two get tired of each other" he asked and I just buried my head on Kuda's chest.

"See now you making my wife shy" Kuda said

"Hie Gomez" I said well I don't know his name I only know his surname.

"Hie Mrs soon to be Diale" he said

"I'll go make you two coffee" I said well it's a little cold

It's like time is moving on fast forward, well marriage isn't always sweets and chocolates. I woke up in the morning went into the closet since the mirror there is bigger. I looked at my cheek and its bruised yes he hit me again, over something stupid. I close my eyes trying to hold the tears from coming out, I feel his arm around waist and his cologne that has filled my nostrils.

"Am sorry! I promise it won't happen again" he whispers and I don't answer because that's what he said last time and the time before that.

"Am sorry my love! I promise I'll never lay a hand on you" He said and I use the back of my hand to wipe the tears. Am so mad at him right now but who am I kidding I can't stay mad at him the next thing I wake up naked in his arms.

Is this how marriage is like?

Getting beat up over silly things then all is well with a simple sorry

[28/02, 20:08] Cathy: *Married @t 16*

By *Cathrine Phiri*

Finale

*** Anele ***

Everything happened so fast, I finished my A' level got great results and my focus was now on the wedding, thank God I have Rutendo who is now a professional wedding planner. I don't know how she managed to get her certificate so soon and I never want to know. Am now 18 years turning 19 in 5

months, I know the wedding was supposed to be earlier but hey there's so much to plan than I expected. I don't want just a wedding I want Harry and Meagan's wedding, I want everyone to attend even the president himself just kidding not the president 😊 For the record am not wearing white am getting married in a peach dress, it's a designer of course. My mother was scolding me about how I should wear a white dress and that everybody wears one well am not everybody, am Anele Moyo soon to be Mrs Diale and this is my wedding and I get to wear what I want. My bachelorette party was out of this world, Anita is the best girl since Rutendo took care of the planning and pretty much everything. Then on the groom's side Raymond is the best man of course, I don't have bride's maids because that's what I want 😊. Everything was all set and the makeup artist was applying make up on me with my mother crying on the corner making me want to cry also. Rutendo helped me put on the dress, my stomach feels like it's inside out it's like am going to throw up almost like am going to go on my periods, I just can't explain the feeling.

"Relax Anele this is the moment you've been waiting for!"

Rutendo said

"Am scared!" I swallowed hard "Scared of

what Anele?"

"I don't know I just don't think I can do this" I said

"What's wrong?" She asked and now am about to cry, what is wrong with me, just yesterday I was so thrilled about all this

then why the change of heart. Rutendo takes out her phone and while I inhale and exhale. She starts talking...

*She's scared!..... I don't know.....She's even crying..... You know I can't do that it's bad luck..... Maybe!. Fine but just for a minute..

She then hands me the phone.

Me: Hello!

Him: My love! (I just melt and a smile escapes my lips it's like I forget I was even crying)

Me: You're not supposed to talk to me

Him: Am not supposed to see you, not talk to you Me:

I miss you!

Him: Is that why you're crying? Me: Of

course not (I chuckle) Him: Talk to me,

what's wrong Me: Nothing!

Him: Anele!

Me: Am scared ok! I don't why but am scared

Him: Ok I understand you! I need you to close your eyes and think of the reason why you said yes when I asked you to marry.

Me: I said yes because I love you and I want to spend the rest of my life with you

Him: Okay! Do you still love me and do you still want to spend the rest of your life with me?

Me: I do love you and I want to get married to you.

Him: You sure?

Me: Yes and I love you!

Him: I love you more! Will be waiting for you down the aisle.

Me: Ok

Him: Love you!

I hung up and gave Rutendo her phone back. "Feel better" she asked

"Yes" I nodded "This is it"

"This is it" I smiled

"Am happy for you" she hugged me before calling the make-up artist to come and fix my make-up. Kuda's mum and sisters came to check on me then mother-in-law gave me a necklace, her exact words were " I thought of you the

moment I saw it" and it's beautiful and looks like it costed a fortune. The music started playing and I knew that was my que. My mother came and wished me luck for the thousand time now. I took a deep breath and walked slowly with father who wouldn't stop telling me how proud of me he was. Stepmother is somewhere in the crowd but she did come to greet me before I came out. My father handed me over to Kuda who was looking handsome with his new haircut.

"You look beautiful" he whispered and I just smiled. My worst fear was someone trying to stop the wedding but God heard my prayers and everything went smoothly.

"Do you Kudakwashe Diale take ?"

"I do!" He interrupted the Priest and everyone chuckled

"Ok then! Do you Anele Moyo! "

"I do!" I said well I can't wait to be his wife. The Priest just shook his head and continued.

"With the power invested in me I pronounce you husband and wife. Mr Diale you may kiss your bride" the Priest said well I have the craziest husband in the world, I just love the way I have turned him into a teenager. He pulled me towards him by waist, well I was expecting just s soft peck on the lips but no! Mr Diale doesn't work like that 😊

We went for the photo shoot then changed to the second outfit, this is so tiring ayy I just want to go home and sleep. I

don't know why I feel so tired all of a sudden, this is not how I pictured I'd be at my wedding. We had our first dance then the rest joined I have never seen my mother in law this happy 😊 she's even dancing. Rutendo is now drunk well that's Rutendo no wonder she refused to be the bride's maid, she knew she was going to get wasted. I don't know went last I had so much fun, then it was over people went back to their homes. We prepared for our honeymoon which was a gift from our in-laws. (Kuda's parents)

"So where are we going" I asked Kuda "It's a surprise" he answered

"Am tired" I said

"We'll be there in a second. But I have to cover your eyes" he said

"Why?"

"Just trust me ok" he said as he covered my eyes then put on headphones. He carried me all the way. I don't see the need to put on headsets but am going to trust him.

After a few minutes.....

"Don't freak out ok" he said "Depends!" I said

"Just take a deep breath and relax" he said as he removed the blind fold and the headsets. Or my God we in a plane, am scared of heights I swear am about to shit myself right now. I held on him tight and he laughed. I have never been on a plane, am scared of an elevator let alone a plane.

"Don't tell me you going to start crying" he asked "As long as you hold me tight"

"So it's going to be like this for the next 8 months" he said

"What are you talking about?"

"We're pregnant" he held on me tighter. "Am pregnant?"

"Obvious! Why do you think made you turn into a cry baby" he laughed

"Wow! So am going to have a baby?" "No! We are going to have a baby" he said "So where are we going?"

"Canada!" He answered "Yay!"

Everything was great, the honeymoon was exactly what I needed but Kuda was the one who lost a pound or two because I turned into a 6 year old with the mood swings and

the food cravings. We went back to Zimbabwe in about 3 months and I was already showing, mother in law was happy not to mention my mother who wanted me by her side all the time. Rutendo will definitely be the Godmother judging by the way I love her. When I was due in one month I had to go live with my mother because of tradition whatsoever. I gave birth to a baby girl, a lot of people were a little disappointed but not my husband, he wanted a girl from the word go. I gave birth through section C because I literally fainted during labour which means bye bye to my modelling career and wearing crop tops. Well I can't model because am now a mother with stretch marks plus I have the restaurant and my kid to take care of. My baby is named Anashe♥. She's now 3 months, we still living with mother yes Kuda comes to visit us now and then although he does not enter the house. I ran into Andile the other day and he apologized well I have nothing against him so I forgave him.

*** Kudakwashe ***

Am the happiest man on the planet with 4 children and a wife I love, yes we fight but eventually we make up. She's been at her mother's for 4 months and I miss her like crazy.

Raymond and I are just chilling at my place I don't know why he's always here leaving his wife in South Africa.

"Quick question! How come you're always here" I asked

"Do you think its fun being chief with everyone coming with

their problems" he sighed

"You should have thought about that before agreeing to be chief 😊 why do you think I refused"

"Well I see that now" he said

"You can't run from your responsibility"

"I am going to run until they remove me" he laughed

"Well good luck with that"

"That reminds me I have something I need to take care of in town" he said standing up

"Vele uyangitshiya (you're leaving me by myself?)"

"Call your wife or something" he said heading out and I did try to call Anele but her phone goes straight to voicemail.

Just great ♂

The door opened and I just smiled

"Surprise!" She said 😊 just the person I wanted to see.

"Where the baby" I asked

"Am fine thanks and how are you".

"Am sorry sweetheart! How are you" I asked

"I miss my husband" she said as she sat on top of me.

"Where's Anashe?"

"With grandmother" she answered "I missed you!"

"I missed you more" she replied

"You should leave Anashe with her grandmother for a while"

"I thought you missed us" she giggled

"I missed you more! Are you thinking what am thinking?"

"What are you thinking" she giggled

"We should give Anashe a little sister" "No! No!

And No! She shook her head

.....**The End**.....

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends. Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

**For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>
And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it
<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>**